











THE DISCOVERY AND  
CONQUEST OF PERU



Augustin de Zárate  
A HISTORY OF  
THE DISCOVERY AND  
CONQUEST OF PERU

Books I–IV translated out  
of the Spanish by  
THOMAS NICHOLAS  
*Anno* 1581

*LONDON:*  
The Penguin Press

PUBLISHED MCMXXXIII BY  
THE PENGUIN PUBLISHING CO. LTD  
AND PRINTED BY  
WESTERN PRINTING SERVICES LTD  
BRISTOL

# The Table of the Chapters contay- ned in this present Booke.

<i>Introduction.</i>	xi
<i>The Epistle.</i>	xxxv
<i>To the Reader.</i>	xli

## The first Booke.

I.	Of the notice had of <i>Peru</i> , and how the dis- couery was begun.	1
II.	How <i>Don Francisco Pizarro</i> , abode in the Ile of <i>Gorgona</i> , and how, with a small companie of men, hee sayled beyond the Equinoctiall Line.	5
III.	How <i>Don Francisco Pizarro</i> came into Spayne, to give knowledge of his trauaile, and dis- couery of <i>Peru</i> to the Emperor his Maiestie.	8
IV.	Of the people which inhabite vnder the Equi- noctiall Lyne, and other notable thinges which there are found.	10
V.	Of the vaynes of Pitche, which are found at the Cape, called <i>Destahelena</i> , and of the Gyants, which sometime dwelt in those parts.	12
VI.	Of the people and thinges which are beyonde the Equinoctiall Lyne, toward the South, alonge the Sea coaste.	15
VII.	Of the ordenary winde, which bloweth in the Playnes, and the reason of the drynes of that soyle.	20
VIII.	Of the qualitie of the Mountaynes of <i>Peru</i> , and the habitation of Indians and Christians.	26
IX.	Of the Cities of Christians which are in the mountaines of <i>Peru</i> .	31
X.	Of the opinion which the Indians held, touch- ing their creacion.	37

XI.	Of the rites and sacrifice, which the Indians vsed in <i>Peru</i> .	39
XII.	What the Indians opinion is, touchinge the resurrection of the body.	42
XIII.	Of the Origen of the Kings of <i>Peru</i> , which were called <i>Ingas</i> .	43
XIV.	Of the notable things which <i>Guaynacaua</i> built in <i>Peru</i> .	48
XV.	Of the estate of the Warres in <i>Peru</i> , at the time of the Spanyardes comming into that Countrey.	52

### The second Booke.

I.	Of the conquest, atchiued by <i>Don Francisco Pizarro</i> , and his men in the Prouince of <i>Peru</i> .	58
II.	Of things which happened to the Gouvernour, in the Iland of <i>Puna</i> , and the conquest therof.	60
III.	How the Gouvernour went to <i>Tumbez</i> , and of the conquest which hee there obtayned vntill hee inhabited the Citie of <i>S. Mighell</i> .	62
IV.	How the gouernor went to <i>Caxamalca</i> , and what there hapned.	65
V.	How the battaile was fought with <i>Atabaliba</i> , and he taken prisoner.	68
VI.	How <i>Atabaliba</i> commaunded his Brother <i>Guascar</i> to be slayne, and how <i>Hernando Pizarro</i> discouered in the country.	73
VII.	How <i>Atabaliba</i> was put to death vpon surmise, that hee would haue slaine the Christians, and how <i>Don Diego de Almagro</i> went into <i>Peru</i> , the seconde Iorney.	81
VIII.	How <i>Ruminagui</i> , Captayne to <i>Atabaliba</i> rebelled, and made insurrection in the land of <i>Quito</i> , and how the gouernor passed to <i>Cusco</i> .	86
IX.	How Captain <i>Benalcasar</i> went to the conquest of <i>Quito</i> .	90

# The Table.

vii

X.	How <i>Pedro de Aluarado</i> came to Peru, and what hapned vnto him.	94
XI.	How <i>Don Diego de Almagro</i> , met with <i>Don Pedro de Aluarado</i> , and what followed.	97
XII.	How <i>Don Diego de Almagro</i> , and <i>Don Pedro de Aluarado</i> , met with Captayne <i>Quixquix</i> , and what passed betweene them.	100
XIII.	How the Gouvernour payde to Don Pedro, the 100000 poyzes, accordinge to agreeamente, and how <i>Don Diego</i> would intrude into the Gouvernement of <i>Cusco</i> .	104

## The thirde Booke.

I.	How <i>Don Diego de Almagro</i> , toke his iorney toward <i>Chili</i> .	107
II.	Of the paines and troubles that <i>Don Diego</i> and his army passed in the way toward <i>Chili</i> , and of certain particularities of the countrey.	109
III.	Of the returne of <i>Hernando Pizarro</i> , into <i>Peru</i> , of the prouisions which he brought with him and of the rebellion of the Indians.	115
IV.	How <i>Don Diego de Almagro</i> , beseeged <i>Cusco</i> , and tooke <i>Hernando Pizarro</i> prisoner.	117
V.	How the Indians slew many succours, which the Gouvernour sente to ayde his Brother in <i>Cusco</i> .	122
VI.	How the Marques, sent to demaund helpe, into diuerse partes, and how Captayne <i>Alonso de Aluarado</i> came to ayde him.	126
VII.	How the Marques went to <i>Cusco</i> , to succour his Brother, and by the way as hee wente, hearinge of the victory of <i>Alonso de Aluarado</i> , hee returned to the Cittie of the Kinges.	130
VIII.	How the Marques gathered a new Army and how <i>Alonso de Aluarado</i> and <i>Gonsalo Pizarro</i> brake out of Prison.	132

IX.	How both the Gouvernors met, and how <i>Hernando Pizarro</i> was set at lybertie.	135
X.	How the Marques proceeded against <i>Don Diego</i> , and how hee retyred to <i>Cusco</i> .	137
XI.	How <i>Hernando Pizarro</i> wente towarde <i>Cusco</i> , with his Armye, and the Battayle of <i>Salinas</i> .	139
XII.	What happened after the Battayle of <i>Salinas</i> was fought, and how <i>Hernando Pizarro</i> returned into Spayne.	144
XIII.	What happened to Captain <i>Valdiuia</i> , in his voiage toward <i>Chili</i> .	148

## The fourth Booke.

I.	How <i>Gonsalo Pizarro</i> prepared his Iorney to the countrey of <i>Zinamon</i> .	150
II.	How <i>Gonsalo Pizarro</i> departed from <i>Quito</i> , and came to the countrey of <i>Zinamon</i> , and what happened in his way.	151
III.	Of the villages and countreyes, that <i>Gonsalo Pizarro</i> passed, til he came to the place where hee built a Vergantine.	153
IV.	How <i>Francisco de Arellana</i> fled with the Vergantine, and what trouble happened by the wante therof.	156
V.	How <i>Gonsalo Pizarro</i> returned to <i>Quito</i> , and what extremities he passed.	159
VI.	How the dwellers at <i>Chili</i> , procured the Marques death	163
VII.	How the Marques was auised of the conspiracy pretended	166
VIII.	Of the death of the Marques <i>Don Francisco Pizarro</i> .	169
IX.	Of the natural condicion, custome, and qualitie, of the Lord Marques, and also of <i>Don Diego de Almagro</i> .	175



X.	How <i>Don Diego de Almagro</i> gathered an Army, and put certayne gentlemen to death, and how <i>Alonso de Aluarado</i> rose on the behalfe of his Maiestie.	182
XI.	How the Cittie of <i>Cusco</i> arose on the Kinges side, and chose for their chefe Captaine, <i>Pedro Aluarez Holguin</i> , and what followed.	184
XII.	How <i>Don Diego</i> went to seeke <i>Pedro Aluarez</i> , and when hee coulede not ouertake him, hee passed to <i>Cusco</i> .	187
XIII.	How <i>Vaca de Castro</i> , came to the Campe of <i>Pedro Aluarez</i> , and <i>Alonso de Aluarado</i> , who receiued him for their Gouvernor, and what followed.	191
XIV.	How <i>Don Diego</i> , slue <i>Garcia de Aluarado</i> in <i>Cusco</i> , and how hee made all his power against <i>Vaca de Castro</i> .	194
XV.	How <i>Vaca de Castro</i> departed from the Cittie of the Kinges, to <i>Xauxa</i> , and what there was doone.	197
XVI.	How <i>Vaca de Castro</i> went with his Host, from <i>Xauxa</i> to <i>Guamanga</i> , and what hee passed with <i>Don Diego</i> .	200
XVII.	How <i>Vaca de Castro</i> , brought his Army into the feelde, to giue the battayle, and what thereupon followed.	203
XVIII.	How <i>Vaca de Castro</i> , moued forward his Squadrons agaynst <i>Don Diego</i> .	205
XIX.	How the battayle of <i>Chupas</i> was fought.	208
XX.	How <i>Vaca de Castro</i> , gaue vnto his soldiers for the Victory.	213
XXI.	Of the Iustice, which was executed vpon the offenders.	215
XXII.	How <i>Vaca de Castro</i> sent to discover the Countrey, into seuerall places.	217
	Of the Ritch Mynes of <i>Potosi</i> .	219



## INTRODUCTION

IN the year 1522, two decades after the discovery of the New World, and eleven years after Nuñez de Balboa waded into the Pacific and took possession of it in the name of his Sovereign the Emperor Charles V, the *Adelantado* Pascual de Andagoya set sail from the town of Panama, newly founded on the South Sea (for so the Pacific was then called), and coasted southwards as far as what is now southern Columbia. There he made some journeys of exploration, received some reports of the Inca Empire (rumours of whose gold had reached de Balboa some years before), and returned in 1523 owing to ill health. During the next five years Francisco Pizarro led two further voyages down the coast, by 1528 had sailed as far south as Santa, and had confirmed the rumours of a wealthy but inaccessible empire. So promising seemed the fruits of conquest, that Pizarro's partners, Diego de Almagro and Fernando de Luque, who had first joined their goods into stock of company for a voyage of conquest thither in 1524, felt some hesitation in sending Pizarro to Spain to enlist the support of his Sovereign, thereby attempting to avoid the restrictions and difficulties which now surrounded Cortes after his conquest of Mexico in defiance of

the orders of his immediate superiors; for they feared (as indeed happened) that Pizarro would secure concessions for himself far greater than those which might be accorded to his absent partners.

Charles V listened to Pizarro with interest because he could not afford to overlook any source which might replenish his empty coffers, but before anything was definitely settled, he hurried to Flanders, leaving his Queen to sign the famous *Capitulación* for the conquest of Peru. By its terms Pizarro was ennobled, was appointed Governor, and given large grants of land (the delimitation of which afterwards caused a civil war), Almagro received command of a fortress, and de Luque was made a Bishop; all were to receive large emoluments, but no financial aid was proffered as all salaries were to be paid only when Peru should have been conquered. The agreement lapsed if Pizarro had not collected the stipulated minimum of followers and sailed by a certain date, so like Cortez on a similar occasion, he tricked Charles' officers, and sailed without carrying out the letter of the agreement. Little could any have imagined the magnitude of those golden spoils the acquisition of which obsequious officialdom so nearly jeopardized.

When Pizarro reached Panama in 1530, he quarrelled with Almagro who was not unnaturally

disappointed about the unequal distribution of emoluments and honours, and only when Hernando de Soto arrived with more men did they settle their differences. Pizarro then set out on his voyage of conquest without Almagro who followed with reinforcements later. After a brisk engagement with the Indians in the island of Puna followed by the capture of Tumbez in 1531, Pizarro encountered no further opposition, and spent the rest of the year in exploration. Pizarro, even had he wished to contrive it so, could not have selected a more opportune moment to attack Peru. The last great Inca, Huayna Capac,\* died in 1525, and only very recently had Atahualpa\* succeeded in wresting the crown from his half-brother Huascar,\* the legitimate Inca, to whom their father Huayna Capac had bequeathed his empire. Each of the claimants to the throne was far too occupied to bother about a handful of strangers. However, when Atahualpa heard that Pizarro was striking inland, he was overcome by curiosity to see the white men and their horses, and encouraged him to come and see him. They met at Cajamarca in November 1532, and when Pizarro saw that the Inca was accompanied by some 40,000 troops, he laid an ambush and captured him. Atahualpa realizing that the Span-

\* Called Guaynacaua, Atabalipa, and Guascar respectively by Zárate and others.

iards had come in search of gold and thinking that, once they had been given enough, they would depart, stripped his palaces and the temples of his gods to pay a ransom that consisted of most of the gold that had accumulated in Peru for thousands of years, and was equivalent to perhaps three millions Sterling. The Spaniards thought in all the world there was not so much gold as the Inca promised, but month by month the gold began to pour in. Before the ransom was quite paid, Pizarro decided that the expedition was endangered while the Inca was alive. He could not understand that the capture of the person of the Inca had placed the reins of government in his own hands. The Inca Empire was a peculiar blend of State socialism, run by a feudal bureaucracy at the head of which was a benevolent despot—a type of social organization unintelligible to a European—, so Pizarro could have ruled the empire using the Inca as his mouthpiece without opposition from the Inca's vassals who would merely have considered him their superior Liege.

So instead, to make sure of his own safety, he murdered the Inca after a farcical trial at which the principal witness was Felipillo, a native interpreter, whom one of Atahualpa's wives had with difficulty repulsed from her bed. Pizarro later realized his mistake for he set up the puppet-

Inca Manca and made him swear allegiance to the Emperor. Peru was in his hands, but only to be given over to internecine party factions. With under two hundred horsemen, arquebusiers, and crossbow-men, Pizarro peacefully entered the Inca Empire; before his murder at the hands of his own countrymen in 1541 he had made an empire containing 16,000,000 people and extending over some 380,000 square miles the mint of his Imperial master Charles V in whom then reposed the sovereignty of those parts bestowed in 1493 on the Crowns of Leon and Castile by Christ's Vicar on earth,—Alexander Borgia.

The first ten years of Spanish rule in Peru was a mixture of exploration and civil war. Almagro again quarrelled with Pizarro about the boundaries of their respective properties, took up arms against him, and was defeated at the battle of Las Salinas by Hernando Pizarro, by whose orders he was executed in 1538.

Charles V heard of the execution of Almagro and decided to send the Licenciado Christobal Vaca de Castro to Peru to report on affairs there. If the Marquis died (for he was over sixty), de Castro was to succeed him as Governor. Charles, apparently, wished the Licenciado to co-operate with Pizarro, and had no intention of superseding him. But before de Castro had barely entered the country, Pizarro was murdered by a discontented

faction that associated itself in name only with the cause of Almagro the Lad, Diego de Almagro's son by an Inca lady ; so de Castro had to act as Governor immediately on his arrival. With the help of Carbajal, an experienced veteran, Almagro the Lad was captured at the battle of Chupas in 1542 and executed, but de Castro was generally incompetent and was superseded in 1543 by Blasco Nuñez Vela who landed at Tumbes in 1544 as Viceroy. The Viceroy brought with him a new constitution for the province, and was accompanied by a large retinue among whom were the four judges of the newly formed Royal Audience, or Supreme Court of Peru, and Augustine de Zárate, our historian, who came as *Contador*, or Accountant-General to look after the ' Royal Fifths ' which by that time were only being forwarded at irregular intervals.

But Charles V had begun to take an interest in his American possessions too late. Though the New Laws were in the best interests of his subjects both Spanish and native, the Conquistadores had been too long settled as landed proprietors with seigniorial rights over the Indians whom they held in service. Many of the natives were happy with their Spanish masters, and the masters were in no mood to be despoiled of rights legally granted them many years before. The Viceroy tried to enforce the New LAWS immediately he



arrived, but his arrogance coupled with an enthusiastic incompetence alienated his supporters, and after an indictment for murder had been laid against him by the Judges of the Royal Audience, he was deported from the country. Meanwhile Gonzalo Pizarro, Francisco's half-brother, had left his retirement to lead those who were discontented with the New Laws, and Carbajal bullied the Judges into appointing him Governor. Unfortunately the Viceroy persuaded his escort to land him again at Tumbez, took the field against Gonzalo and was defeated at the battle of Añaquito in 1546. Affairs had now come to such a pitch that Gonzalo resolved to brook no further interference from Spain, injudiciously declared himself Governor instead of King, and entered Lima in triumph in 1546. When Pedro de la Gasca, who was given royal powers by the Emperor and sent to restore order, executed Gonzalo Pizarro and Carbajal after their defeat at the battle of Xaquixaguana in 1546, Spanish Colonial hegemony over Peru was finally consolidated and the first chapter of its history concludes.

Zárate played but a minor part in the civil disturbances in Peru, but on one occasion at least he endangered his life when the Royal Audience sent him to see Gonzalo Pizarro and bid him disband his troops—a thankless task in which he was quite unsuccessful. He appears to have left

Peru about 1551, and was later appointed *Contador* in Flanders in consideration of his services in Peru. He did not reach Peru until 1543, so unfortunately he was not an eyewitness of any of the events described in the first four books of his *Historia del descubrimiento y conquista del Peru* which alone\* Thomas Nicholas translated. Zárate's work was first published at Antwerp in 1555, and was reprinted at Seville in 1577; the printed version differing considerably from the MSS. which is still in existence. When in 1581 Thomas Nicholas turned to Peru, after translating in 1578 Book II of López de Gómara's *Historia general de las Indias* under the title of *The Pleasant Historie of the Conquest of Weast India, now called New Spayne* (the reprinting of which I am considering), there were few Histories of the Spanish Provinces on the South Sea, and only one at all—by Xeres, Pizarro's secretary—written by one of the original band of conquerors.† Although official reports had been sent to Spain, and Pizarro's notary Pedro Sancho, and his nephew Pedro—both eyewitnesses of the murder of the Inca—had committed to MSS. only printed long after their life times some account of what they had seen, it is not surprising that even the most

\* This is not strictly accurate. The last chapter, the account of the Silver Mines of Potosí, is a translation of Bk. VI, Ch. 4.

† *Verdadera Relacion de la Conquista del Peru*. Seville, 1534.

temerarious conquistador shrank from the composition of a history which, had he been able to attempt—for most were illiterate: the Lord Marquis never signed his name—no printer would have dared to set; so discreditable to their ennobled authors were the acts of treachery, bloody deeds, bloodier proselytization, and internecine party struggles that attended the disruption of the Inca Empire. Zárate was a man of some education, but his attempts at history are rather disappointing. Writing so near to the events which he describes, he is hardly so good an authority as might be expected, though he often gives exceedingly useful information about topography and ethnology. His diffuse style, more reminiscent of a chronicler than an historian, together with his ignorance of Quechua, the native language, places him at a disadvantage to historians like Blas Valera and Garcilaso de la Vega who, although they belonged almost to another generation, had Inca blood in their veins and had acquired at first hand a knowledge of the rites, laws, and customs of their maternal ancestors. Though Zárate appears to have read Plutarch and Livy, and quotes Plato's speculations about the Lost Atlantis which, following the theories then current, he identifies with the newly discovered continent; he failed to see that the Inca culture was more than casually comparable to that Polity

which Plato had dreamed of, and which More and Bacon had envisaged as an actuality only in a New World unfettered by contemporary European theories about Church and State. Zárate obtrudes his acquaintance with Livy and Plutarch, but had he rather digested Thucydides and Tacitus, he might not have failed so conspicuously to apply to the study of Peru some of that rational speculation or insight into human affairs which was beginning to flourish in countries where the sanctions of government could no longer be derived absolutely from sectarian religious sentiment fortified by instincts of dominance and acquisition. Bacon or Montaigne, who were among the first to voice what message the New World had to the Old, could never have discovered it, had they been born Spaniards within the circle of the Inquisition.

The development of the modern colonial system that began with the discovery of America confronted Europeans with the problem of organizing for their own benefit the territories of races whose standards of culture had reached a level considerably below that of their own. Nor can such problems be solved—save by the total extermination of indigenous peoples by the colonizer—until accurate reports of strange outlandish peoples have been collected in sufficient quantity to allow the social anthropologist to have the final say in

questions of internal colonial policy. Had Pizarro remained content with the £3,000,000 in gold (then worth ten times what it is to-day) which he received for the ransom of Atahualpa, and had he made the Inca swear fealty to the Emperor and then released him; it is not impossible that the economic organization of the Andean regions had not entered on the decline from which it never recovered once the monetary system of the Old World took the place of a carefully organized State socialism in which value was estimated on the basis of production and was entirely uncorrelated with the possession of a yellow metal—valued and used for its ornamental properties alone—which had attracted the stranger and proved the Incas' downfall. Under the Incas the country was extraordinarily carefully irrigated and cultivated, roads were good, and should the crops of potatoes, maize, or cocoa have failed in one district, the surplus from another was forwarded to make good the deficiency. The Inca heads of provinces and districts with their subordinate officials were uncontaminated by any of the evils of a venal European bureaucracy; to have taken bribes—had it been possible, for there was no money—or to default in their duty to the Inca—which few save the greatest Lords thought of doing—would have been just as treasonable to the Inca as an attack upon his person; although laws and cus-

toms were rigid and punishments severe, the common people were singularly law abiding and the laws were rarely transgressed. Such were some of the characteristics of a social organization so different from that of the Spaniards that the idea never entered their heads that it might be worthy of preservation. Although distinguished authorities are divided whether the Inca civilization was already in a state of decay, or whether its organization was permanently paralysed by the shock of the Spanish invasion; once the Inca administration had been destroyed, impartial observers, both Inca and Spanish, are agreed that the Spaniards never succeeded in devising a form of government as prosperous or as stable as that which in their blindness they so foolishly annihilated.

Our sole information about Thomas Nicholas is distributed between the ' Epistle ' of his translation of Gómara dedicated to Sir Francis Walsingham, Secretary of State, and a number of letters to and from English Ambassadors to the Spanish Court between 1560 and 1564. It appears that as a factor in the employ of the Levant Company he received the full blast of Spanish anti-English animosity that greeted Elizabeth when in 1588 she succeeded her sister Mary, wife to Philip II, and that in consequence he was

unjustly imprisoned for the greater part of six years. The correspondence which I quote in some detail describes a state of affairs not unlike that in which non-Soviet traders might easily find themselves in Russia to-day. On September 24, 1560, Sir Thomas Challoner, later to go as Ambassador to Madrid, writes to Count de Feria as follows :

Two English merchants, Antony Hickman and Edward Castellin, most honest men, and their factors, Edward Kingsmill and Thomas Nicholas, who have traded for many years with the Canary Isles and Teneriffe unmolested during Queen Mary's reign, have been charged by the Licentiate Mortenus, lately Governor of the Islands, with heresy, and obliged to clear themselves by oath; their goods have been restored by the King, not without the said Licentiate objecting as much as he could. Begs that he will use his influence that they may go about their honest business without molestation.\*

In 1561 Nicholas writes on August 16 to Sir Thomas Chamberlain, the Ambassador, about his troubles :

. . . The writer was taken by those of the Inquisition about twenty months past, and put into a little dark house about two paces long, laden with irons, without sight of sun

\* *Calendar of State Papers, Foreign Series*, 1560-61, No. 552.

or moon all the time, and all his masters goods were embargoed. When he was arraigned they laid to his charge that he had said that the English Mass was as good or better than theirs; that he went not to Mass; that he said he had rather give his money to the poor than buy bulls of Rome with it, with other pretty inventions. He answered, proving their allegations to be most untrue with many witnesses. Then they put him again in prison for a certain space, and alleged anew against him six or seven articles against the Queen; but, seeing that they could not prevail against him otherwise, they said she was an enemy to the faith, that she was preached to be antichrist, and that she maintained circumcision and the Jewish laws, that also a friar shook off the dust of his shoes against her and the city of London; which abominable and untrue things they proved with a force of forsworn Flemings. Then he stood up to the defence of the Queen, proving their sayings to be most untrue, and requiring justice; but was put into Little-ease again till the end of twenty months, when he protested his innocent blood against the judge to be demanded before Christ. This is the foundation of the proof which they took. The accuser was a "confess of the Jewish line descended," who had procured his death above two years, because he would not give him his master's goods for nought, and had abused him in his house for that cause. Also the law does not permit a man of Jewish



lineage to be officer in the Inquisition, as the said confess is. Also, the witnesses are two thieves and two common women; whereas God has shown His rightful Judgement, for one of them was choked, lying in childbed by her husband, and he hanged for it. Therefore because the Judge was covetous and vicious, and the notary likewise, he refused him for his Judge in the presence of the Licenciado Spinosa, Licenciado Sarvantes, promoter, and Don Juan De Vega, writer; the said Judge however, would not be refused, which was contrary to law.

Beseeches him to inform the King of Spain how Her Majesty is reported and of false witnesses accused of his subjects in Canary. Also that he will speak with the Archbishop of Seville, the Inquisitor General of Spain, that he may understand the articles written in his behalf, and that his masters have lost by their evil justice near 6,000 French crowns; and he yet remaining a prisoner for the judge to work his revenge upon him for refusing him. Desires that the Archbishop will remit this matter here to the Provincial of St. Domingo, Doctor Mesias, and the Licentiate Spinoza, so that it may be definitely sentenced without delay. The confess is called Francisco De Coronado, of the ancient Jews descended.\*

The next day Kingsmyll also writes to Chamberlain from Grand Canary giving a long recital

of wrongs done to him by the Licenciate Morteo. He concludes :

. . . The like diligence was used against Thomas Nicholas in the isle of Teneriffe, as may appear by the testimony sent herewith, alleging against him that the Queen had proclaimed war against Spain and ordered all Spaniards to depart by a certain day. This matter cost them above 100 doubles in costs and charges, besides certain pieces of linen that were lost, to the value of thirty or forty more. Thomas Nicholas was afterwards put in prison ; and they would have stayed a ship of theirs laden with sugar but that it broke out of the port perforce, leaving thirty chests of sugar behind. The said Thomas Nicholas was delivered out of prison for that matter, but he has now been imprisoned for nearly two years, being accused to the Inquisition, whereby their goods are embargoed.\*

On October 17 of the same year Nicholas is still in trouble for Heu Tipton writing to Chamberlain from Seville ‘ . . . Thinks Kingsmill and Nicholas write concerning their troubles,’† and again on May 20, 1564 after two years’ imprisonment in the Canaries he writes as follows to the new Ambassador, Sir Thomas Challoner :

Whereas Kingsmill has advertised him of their imprisonment in the Islands of Canary,

\* *Ibid.* 1561-62, No. 412.      † *Ibid.* 1561-62, No. 623.

by the justices spiritual and temporal, informs him that a certain confessor and others accused him to the high priest of being a liver according to the English law; whereupon, without any foundation, they arrested his masters goods, valued at 14,000 ducats, and laid him in prison for two years, without sight of sun or moon. And when he came to publication of witness they laid proof against the Queen, with certain articles, how she was an enemy to the faith, etc., by which proof they would also have proved him likewise an enemy to it, and this done they detained him in other two years in prison. Upon the King's letters he was brought thither and delivered into the castle of Seville, where he remained night and day in chains for seven months, and was then brought into the public court in Seville in March last, where they gave him quit; and yet condemned him never to depart out of Spain nor return to the Islands of Canary; and at his deliverance out of the castle of the high priests commanded him not to depart out of Seville. Now, when he was requested to have their Sentence for releasing his master's goods, they refuse. Asks that justice may be done to Kingsmill and himself.\*

Challoner probably secured permission for Nicholas to leave Spain fairly soon; at any rate on June 6 Nicholas

\* *Ibid.* 1564-65, No. 411.

Repeats his letter of the 20th ult. Here are four English ships in the river of Seville, which will be ready to depart for England in fifteen or twenty days.\*

Save his translations we have no further news of Thomas Nicholas. In 1577 appeared *The strange and marueilous Newes lately come from the great Kingdome of Chyna, which adjoyneth to the East India* 'translated out of the Castlyn tongue by T.N.' This is a small pamphlet of six leaves, and the copy, once in the Britwell Library, is apparently unique. It was followed by his translation of Gómara in 1578 (reprinted 1596), and his translation of Zárate in 1581. But for these works there is nothing to show that Nicholas was alive after 1564. In the Epistle of *The Pleasant Historie* before-mentioned, dedicated to Walsingham, he describes how on a journey from Toledo to Castile he met 'an auncient Gentleman, worshipfully accompanied' who welcomed him into his companie, after he had beheld his white head and beard; and later introduced himself as 'Old Zárate,'—our historian. Zárate died about 1561, so this meeting—which we need not doubt—probably took place between 1551 and 1558. Perhaps we may assume that hack translation was not the last resort of his declining years. Once the exploits of English seamen were in everyone's

\* *Ibid.* 1564-65, No. 464.

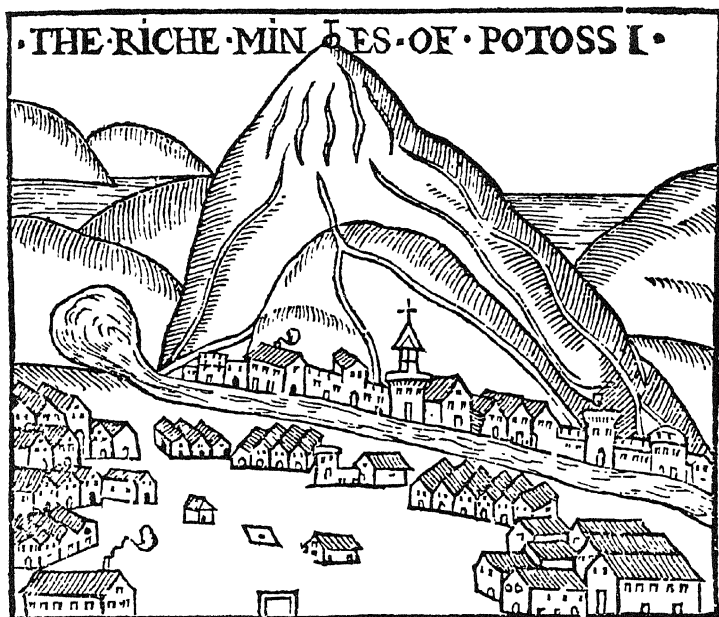
mouths and all are eager for news of the New World, Nicholas at last finds a printer for translations which he has had by him for some twenty years, and one of these he dedicates to Walsingham, the Secretary of State, who befriended him on his return to England in 1564.

All Nicholas' translations are exceedingly rare. His translation from Zárte is a small quarto printed in black letter with insertions in Roman and Italic. The Text reprinted here was transcribed from the only complete British Museum copy, that in the Grenville Library. In the text printed here obvious misprints have been corrected, the black letter is printed in Roman, the Roman is printed in small capitals, and the Italic remains unchanged ; the make-up conveys as far as possible the general style of the original. The two title-pages, reproduced by permission of the Trustees, are the same size as the originals.

D. B. THOMAS.



THE  
DISCOVERIE AND CONQUEST  
of the Prouinces of *PERU*, and  
*the Nauigation in the South*  
Sea, along that Coast.  
*And also of the ritche Mines*  
of *POTOSI*.



Imprinted at London by Richard Ihones. Febr. 6. 1582.





TO THE RIGHT HO-  
nourable, Maister *Thomas Wilson*,  
*Doctor of the Ciuill Lawe, and one*  
of the principall Secretaries, to the  
*Queenes most excellent Maiestie.*

**T**Vllius, and Caius Plinius, wrote that  
neither Posie nor Rethoricke seemed  
sweete or delectable without the ornament  
of eloquence. Yet an Historie, of what-  
soeuer sorte it be written, dooth please and  
delight: because, men may thereby knowe,  
the successe of things happened, to the  
knowledge whereof, the nature of man is  
bent: yea, the tale of a Plowman, is  
sometime delightfull to the hearer, espec-  
iallie when any new thing is discovered.  
And where the stile of this historie in our  
English tongue is not, nor at the least, I  
can not polish as learned men might re-  
quire. Yet the troth and pith of the  
matter vttered in plaine sorte shall suffice

*giving licence as much, (as in me lieth) to whosoever that will take the paines, to write it ouer againe, to beautifie the same, as to him or them shall seeme conuenient: as often times, hath happened among the Greeke and Latine Historiographers and Translators.*

*The Author of this woorke, right honorable, was a Gentleman of woorshipful stocke or lineage, he was highlie esteemed of the Emperour Charles the fift: vnto whose Maiestie, he was sometime Secretarie in his roiall counsel of iustice, and afterward ordained Auditor of accompts of the reuenues appertaining to his Maiestie in the Prouinces of Peru and firme land.*

*This well minded Gentlemen, after the writing of this Historie, feared the publishing hereof for two principall causes: The one, least the discendent of such as had committed things not woorthie of*

*praise, would conceaue some euill oppinion of him : or els the issue of the vertuous and noble sort, would judge the praise and commendations of their progenitors sufficiently set foorth according to their deserts : In consideration whereof, he called to remembraunce the oppinion of Horatius, which was, that no Historie should come to light untill nine yeares, were fullie past after the action thereof. This oppinion liked him not, but rather thought it more conuenient, that Histories woorthie of writing should abide in scilence for the space of lxxxx. yeares, thinking that in so manie yeares space, the linage and offspring of the one sort might consume, and the race of the noble and vertuous, to be contented vwith the commendation of their Auncestors.*

*The Kinge of Spaine that now is, hauing perused the originall Copie of this Historie, requested mine Author to publish*

*the same in Printe: and in accomplishment of his Maiesties commaundement he hath so doone. And the Englishing of foure bookes of his worke, I most humbly here present vnto your Honor.*

*I may at this day, God be praised, boldlie write that, where the Spanish and Portingall Nations dare glorie of their discoveries & Nauigacions, with great commendations of their Captaines, Colon, Vasco dela Gama, Magalanez, Hernando Cortez: Don Francisco Pizarro, & Don Diego de Almagro. Now may our most gracious Queen, most iustly compare with all the Princes of the world, both for discouery & Navigation.*

*The Discouery of the Portingall East India, was atchiued in 26. moneths, & the West India, in shorter space: Magalanez returned not to manifest his dooinges: But our valyant and noble minded Captaine, Maister Francis Drake, in his*

*Navigation, was occupied more, or nigh three yeares : In which time, he sayled, and attained to the knowledge of the East, and West course, which none at any time had euer atchiued.*

*His painefull trauaile, and mauailous Navigation was not obtayned with white handes, perfumed gloues, daintie fare, or softe lodging : no, no : Honour is not gotten with pleasures, & quiet mindes. For the sweet Roses groweth among Thornes : yet the ignorant will iudge, that perpetuall Fame and Heauenly Felicitie, is a thinge to be gotten with facilitie and ease. But if the poore Sayler should sit as Iudge, I am sure that hee would say, how extreame hunger, thyrst, hard lodging upon Hatches, foule garmentes, blasting stormes of winde, with Hayle, Snowe, bitter colde, Thunder, Lightning, and continuall perill of life, leadeth the hie pathway to the Court of eternall*

Fame. *The honour of our good Captayne and company, lieth not in my pen to set out accordingly : therefore, I remit the same to sutche as hereafter shall iustly sette foorth his paynes and trauell : My humble sute, is to beseech your Honour, to accept this worke into your patronage, and the Almighty graunt your harts desire.*

Your honours at commaundment,  
*Thomas Nicholas.*

## TO THE READER

THE doubt which hath ben held, gentle Readers, vpon the verefiying, by what way it was possible to passe into the Prouinces of *Peru*, I meane for the people, which of antiquitie, there first inhabited: But to satisfie that doubt, seemeth sufficient, the authoritie and opinion of the diuine *Plato*, who (in brief) maketh rehearsal thereof, in his booke, intituled: *Thimeum*, otherwise called, the nature thinges: and afterwarde in another booke, or Dialogue, more at large, proceeding on forward, after his *Thimeum* called *Atlanticum*: Where hee treateth of an Historye, which the *Egyptians* set forth in praise and commendacion of the *Athenienses*, saying: that in times paste, they were of such power, that they ouercame and atchiued victory, against certayne Kinges, and an infinite number of men of warre, which came by the Sea, from a great Iland, called *Insula Atlantica*, which had Origen at Hercules Pillers, and was accounted greater than al Asia, and Africa, wherein was contayned tenne Kingdomes the which *Neptunus* deuided amonge his ten Sonnes: but to the eldest called *Atlas*, hee gaue the greatest Kingdome.

He also writeth of many other memorable things as also of the customs and ritches of this

great Iland, but especially of a famous temple, which was built in the principall Citie: the walles and roofes whereof, were wainscotted, with plate of golde, siluer and latton, and other many particularities, which are longe to rehearse, as originally may be seen, where they are written at large.

Many of whiche customes and ceremonies, at this day wee have seen in *Peru*, from this Iland they sayle to other great Ilands which stand on the farder side thereof, nere adioyning to the firm or continent lande, beyond the which is the sea, called, the brode or true Sea. The formall words of *Plato*, in the beginninge of *Thimeum*, saythe: That Socrates speakyng to the *Athenienses* sayd: it is holden for trouth, that your cittie in time past did resist an innumerable number of enemies, which came from the Sea, called *Mare Athlanticum*, who had taken and enioyed the most parte of all *Europe* and *Asia*: For at that time, that strayght was nauigable: hauyng not far from the mouthe an Ilande, which began neare vnto the Pillers of Hercules, which was reported to be greater than *Asia* and *Africa*: and (ioyntly) from the same was contractacion, in bying and sell yng with other Ilandes, which Ilandes had conference with the fyrme and continent lande, which stoode in frent of them, who were neyghbours vnto the true sea.

For that Sea, with reason might be called the



certayne and true Sea, and the lande, continent and fyrme: this mutche writith *Plato*. He also affyrmeth, that .9000. years before the writyng hereof, the Sea encreased with so mightie a power of water, in those parties, that in one day and one night, this great Ilande suncke, and all the people perished, and that afterwards, the same sea remayned full of landes and shallowes, so that thereby neuer after any mought passe unto the other Ilandes, nor fyrme lande.

All those which write vpon *Plato*, affirme and hold opinion, that this Hystorie was true, so that the most of them, especially, *Marsilius*, *Ficinus*, and *Plantinus*, wil not admit the meanyng to be *Alegoricall*, although many others iudge the contrarie, as the same *Marsilius* referreth upon the annotations vpon *Thimeum*. But, where he speaketh of the .9000. yeres, it seemeth not a fabulus argument: for accordynge to *Eudoxus*, those yeres were to be understood accordynge to the *Egiptians* accompt, where every monthe was accompted one whole yere, and not accordynge to the course of the Sunne: so that .9000. monthes, maketh .750. yeres. Likewise it is almost a demonstration, to geue credit to the oppinion touchyng this Iland, consydering that all the Historiographers, and Cosmographers that wrote of olde time, do cal the Sea, where the Iland suncke *Mathanticum*, reseruing the name which it had

when it was land: Then presupposyng that the Hystorie is true, who can deny that this Ilande *Athlantica*, began from the streight of *Gibraltar*, or not far from *Cadiz*, and extended into the greate Gulfe, where as well North and South, as East and West, is a greater space than the scituation of all *Asia* and *Africa*.

The Ilandes whereof the text maketh mencion seemeth to be *Espaniola*, *Cuba*, *Iamaica*, and the residew which stande in that comarke.

The firme landes, which is sayd do stande in front of the said Ilands: doth appere by reason, to be the same firme land, which now is called after the same name and al the other prouinces, wher vnto it is continent: which, beginnyng from the Straight of *Magalanez*, doth contayne (runnyng Northward) the land of *Peru*: the Prouince of *Popyan*, *Castillia del oro*, *Beragua*, *Nicaragua*, *Guatimalla*, *Nueua Hispania*, the seuen citties, *Florida*, *Bacallaos*: and the said lande, runneth along from thence Norward, vntill it come to joynge almost with *Norway*: In the which (without doubt) is more grounde, then as yet throughout all the world is inhabited, or at least was knowen, before the discouery of this countrey. This matter doth not cause any great difficultie, that the *Romaines* and other nations, which in time past, inioyed the Land of *Spayne*, had not discovered this countrey: It is to be thought that the

roughnes of those Seas, in those days, did disturbe and hinder the Nauigation.

So that this lande, mey well bee called the firme and continent Land, whereof *Plato* writeth : which doth agree with all the tokens and signes, which hee giveth of the other : cheefly, wherein hee affirmeth, that it lyeth infront of the South Sea. Then foreasmuch as it hath been sayled in our daies, in the sayd South Sea doth appere, that in respect of the bredth and greatnes of the sayde South Sea, all the *Mediterraneum* Sea and as much as is knowen of the Ocean : vulgarly called the Northern Sea, are Riuers in comparison of the other.

Then all this approved true, the signes, tokens and wordes of *Plato*, do therewith accord : so that there is no doubt or difficultie in the first passage into *Peru* of innumerable people, as well from the great Iland *Atlantica*, as also from other Ilandes, from which Ilandes they vsed to sayle : and also out of the firme Land, they might passe into *Peru* : and if in this pointe should seeme any difficultie, yet it is to bee credited, that by the South Sea, they had vse and knowledge of Nauigation, by contraction and traficke, which they had with great Iland, where the text declareth, that they had great aboundance of Shippes, yea and Roades, and harbors, made by force of hande, for their conseruacion, where nature wanted.

This is as much as may be gathered touching this matter which is not small, for a thing of such antiquitie, without light: Cheefely, that in all the Prouinces and Countrey of *Peru*, were founde no kinde of Letters or Writinge, to conserue the remembrance of things past, nor yet the pictures or paynting which serued in the new *Spayne*, for Letters, sauing, only certayne stringes, of diuerse colours, full of knots: so that by these knots and distance between them was an account kepte among that people, but marvailous strange to be vnderstood, as hereafter in this History shal be declared. Therefore I may saye with *Horatius*:

*Si quid nouisti rectius istis,  
Candidus imperti: si non vis utere mecum.*

And as concerning the Discouery of this newe countrey, the wordes of *Seneca* doth fit, which he set out in his *Medea* Tragedy.

*Venient annis sæcula feris,  
Quibus Oceanus vincula rerum  
Laxet, nouosque typhis detegat orbes  
Atque ingens pateat tellus  
Nec sit terris vltima thyle.*

Besides the oppinion of *Plato*, at his day are to be seene the Ilands of *Asorez*, *Canarie*, *Madera* and Ilands of *Cabo Verde*: with wonderfull shallowes and Sande, lyinge farre out into the mayne Sea,

which are thought to haue bin part of the sayd Iland *Athlantica*.

This History doth also set forth the dutie, and royall seruice, of the Subiect to his Prince, and how Mutynies are justly punished: and likewise, last of all, how blood is purified with blood: and the highe waye to *Honour* is great paine, and daunger of lyfe. And I for my part (Gentle Reader) desire no more for my prayers, but that thou wylte as willingly accept my trauaile, as I with good will do offer the same.

*Farewell.*



# THE HISTORY OF THE *Discovery and Conquest of the Prouince of Peru, and of the Warres and other notable thinges which there happened.*

¶ Of the notice of *Peru*, and how the discovery was  
begon. Chap. 1.

IN the yeare of our Lord and Sauour Jesus Christ 1525. in the Cittie of PANAMA which standeth scituated on the border of the South Sea, in the Prouince of firme Land, called CASTILLIA DEL ORO, dwelt three Gentilmen, among whom, was sundrye times conference concerninge the vnderstandinge which they had obtained of PERU, Whereupon they agreede to proceed on the discuery of the same, and there vpon laid all their goods into stocke of company.

The first and principallest of them was called *Don Francisco Pizarro*, who was borne in a Cittie of Spayne called TRUGILLIO: The second was named *Don Diego de Almagro*, natural of the Towne of MALLAGON, whose stocke or lynage could not vnto this day be perfectly knowen: yet some doth holde opinion, that hee was found at the Church doore in his swadling clothes, after that hee was newly borne: The thirde was a Preest called *Fernando de Luque*: And where these were the richest and principallest men in the Countrey, they determined to encrease their ritches, and also to serue herein his Maiesty the Emperour *Charles* the fifth:

Whereupon they concluded to take in hande, to discover by the South Sea, the Easterly coast of firme Lande, towards those places which afterward were named PERU: So that after they had obtained licence of the Governour, who at that instant then governed for his Maiesty, called *Pedro Arias de Auila*, *Don Francisco Pissaro* arriued, and rigged forth a Shippe wherein hee himself tooke Shipping as Captaine General, with 114. men in his company, and so proceeded on the voyage, and in short space hee discovered a smal and poore Prouince, fiftie Leagues distant from the Cittie of PANAMA, the which he named PERU, and afterwards called the whole Countrey of the same name, which was discovered for the space of 1200. Leagues: And proceeding forward hee found another Land, which the Spanyards named the burnt Towne, where the Indians of that place held them cruel warre, and slew many of his men, so that he was forced to retire sore wounded, to the Countrey of CHINCHAMA.

Euery league  
containeth  
3. Englishe  
Miles.

In this meane season, *Don Diego de Almagro*, who abroad at home, had prepared another ship, and therein tooke shipping with 70. Spanyardes, and with them proceeded to seeke *Don Francisco Pissarro*, sayling along the coast til hee came to the Riuer which he named the Riuer of *S. Ihon*, which standeth 100. Leagues distant from *Panama*: And findinge him not, he returned to the burnt Towne, and there had vnderstanding of his beeing there, where hee also came a shore, but the Indians encouraged with the victory and expulsion of *Don Francisco*, did likewise valyantly resist his entry, yea, and also put him and his company to the woorse:



in so much that they entered a Forte, where the Spaniards defended them selues through the ouersight of those which had the charge of that part of the Fortresse: by meane whereof, they put the Spanyardes to flight, and also with a stripe put out one of the eyes of *Don Diego*, by reason whereof they were forced to flee and to retire to the Sea side to take Shippinge agayne, and from thence sayled along the Coast of firme Land, vntill hee arriued at CHINCHAMA, where he found *Don Francisco*, with whom after long communication, and refreshing of themselues, they gathered together about 200. Spanyardes, and so proceeded againe vpon the discouery with two Shippes and 3. CANOAS, which were small Vessels, built like vnto Troughes: In which Nauigation, they passed many and great troubles, by reason the Coaste is lowe, and full of Marrish ground, and replenished with great Lizarts, which the Indians call Great Lizarts. CAYMANES, and are Beastes which breede in the mouthes of those Riuers, which are so great, that commonly they are of 20. yea, and 25. foote long: Their property is, aswel to refresh themselues on the Land, as in the Water: but if any of them can laye holde vpon Man or Beast in the Water, their strength is such that they carry them vnder water, where as they deuoure and consume them: But cheefly they smell a Dogge a farre off, and they laye their Egges on the Land, a great number together, where they breede: but among the Sandes they are slow of their creeping: after they haue hatched, they leade their Younge to the Water: in the which their natural properties, they may bee compared to the Crocodilles of NILO: they also suffer much

The Tree  
called  
Maugle.

honger, for their feedinge when they want meate, is the fruite of a Tree called MAUGLE, whereof are many in those Riuers, which are of hard Timber, high and straight in groweth, and grow in sale water, which is not onely salte but also bitter. But the opinion is, that those Beastes use to eate of that Fruite, when other feeding fayleth: they eat also Fish. In all this Coast, the Grayne called MAIZ groweth not.

In this sorte they went rowinge with their CANOAS against the currant of the Sea, which always runneth Northward, and their way Southward: and in this Nauigacion all along the Coaste, the Indians assaulted them accordinge to the custome of their Warres, thundering out cryes and noyse, callinge them banished men, with haire on their faces, yea, such as were bred of the scum of the Sea, without any other Origen or Linage, because the Sea had brought them thither: demaunding also why they wente like Vacabondes Wandringe the World: it should appeare saide they, that you are ydle persons, and haue not wherein to imploy your selues, because you abide in no place, to labour and till the ground.

And whereas many of their men and Captaines were slaine by these Indians, as wel by hunger, as other wise, *Don Diego* determind to returne to PANAMA for mo men: the which his determination he performed, and had from thence 80. men, so that with them and the residew that remained aliue, they arriued at the Land called CARAME, which was without the dominion of the MAUGLARES, and a Countrey abundant of meate, but meanelly inhabited: The Indians of the Countrey,

which were men of War, had their cheekes full of holes, wherein were placed Pearles of Golde: and finding this place so fruitfull, they abode there vntill *Don Diego de Almagro* returned agayne to PANAMA for more men: But in this meane while *Don Francisco Pizarro* returned abiding the coming of his companion, in a little Iland which stode neere vnto the Mayne, called INSULA DE GALLO, where hee stood in neede of all thinges necessary.

¶ How *Don Francisco Pizarro* abode in the Iland of *Gorgona*, and how with the small company of men, which hee had remayninge, hee sayled till hee passed the Equinoctiall. Chap. 2.

WHEN *Don Diego de Almagro* returned to PANAMA for succour, he found that his Maiestie had provided for gouernment of the same Cittie, a Gentleman of CORDOVA, called *Pedro de los Rios*, who staid his proceeding personally, because those which remained in the Iland of GALLO had sente secretly to this new Gouvernour, to intreate that hee should not permit any moe men, to dy in that dangerous journey, without any profit, whereas tofore others of their Nacion had ended their dayes, and that it might please him to commaund them also to returne. In consideration whereof, *Pedro de los Rios* sente his Deputie with especiall commaundment, that all such as were willing, might safely returne

to PANAMA without daunger, and without disturbinge of any that would force them to abide there.

And when this newes and order taken, came to their knowledge, they forth with tooke Shippinge with great ioye, euen as though they had escaped out of captiuitie of Moares: so that only 12. men abode willingly with *Don Francisco Pizarro*, with the which, beeing so few in number, hee durst not abide there, but went to an Iland vnhabited, situated sixe Leagues, from the Mayne in the Sea: and because this Iland was replenished with many faire Springes and brookes, he named it GORGONA, whereas he with his company maintained themselues with Cockles, Crabbes, and great Snakes, which are there in aboundance: hee aboard there vntil his Shippe returned from PANAMA, which brought nothing but only Victuall, wherein hee with his 12. men toke shipping, who were so constant and vertuous, that they only were the principall cause of the discouery of PERU, of whom one was called *Nicolas de Ribera*, naturall of OLBERA: *Pedro de Candia*, born in Greece, in the Iland of CANDIA: *Ihon de torre*, *Alonso brisenio* borne in BENAVENT: *Christopher de Peralta*, borne in BAESA: *Alonso de Trugillio* borne in TRUGILLIO: *Francisco de Cuellar*, borne in the Towne of CUELLAR: *Alonso de Molina*, borne in the Cittie of VBEDA. Their cheefe Pilot, was named *Bartilmew Ruiz*, borne in the Towne of MOGUEX. This happy company sayled with great perril and daunger, against the winde and currant vntil they arrived at a Prouince called MOSTRIPE, which standeth betweene the Villages which the Christians had inhabited: the one they named TRUXILLIO, and the

12. men only  
remaine  
with Don  
Francisco  
Pizarro.

The Names  
of the first  
discouerers.

other S. MIGHELL, and there aboad a certaine time, for want of men, they durst not proceede beyond the Riuer called CHIRA, and there prouided themselves of the Cattell of that countrey, which were Sheepe, and also of Indian Interpretors who willingly serued them. Notwithstanding beeing there well refreshed, embarked againe and sayled vnto the Porte of TUMBEZ, where they had intelligence of a princely House, which the Lord of PERU had in that place, also a Towne of Indians which were exceedingly ritch. This place was one of the most notablest things in PERU, vntill such time that the Indians of the Ilande PUNA destroyed it, as hereafter shal be declared: and there hee left three fugitive Spanyardes, who were slaine by the Indians, as at the length was knowen. So that with this intelligence they returned backe againe to PANAMA, having been three yeares in the same Discouery, in great perrill, suffering many miseries, as well by want of Victuals, as by the Warres and resistance of the Indians, and also mutiny amonge themselues, who were in despaire the most of them, to finde any profitable thing: But yet the wisdom and gentle condicion of *Don Francisco Pizarro* pacified their discorde with great courage, perswading them of the great hope which he had in *Don Diego de Almagro*, for the provision of Man, Victuals, Horses, and Armour: So that where those three Gentilmen, the letters forward of this Voyage were the ritchest men in that partes, were now the poorest, and yet indetted in great summes of Money.

¶ How *Don Francisco Pizarro* came into Spayne, to giue knowledge to his Maiestie, of the discouery of *Peru*, and of some of the Customes, and properties of the *naturals of the Countrey*. Chap. 3.

THE Discouery being begun, in the manner before declared, *Don Francisco Pizarro* came into Spayne, and gaue intelligence to the Emperour his Maiestie, of all such thinges as had happened, beseeching his highness in recompence and reward of his paynes, to graunt vnto him the gouernment of such Countreyes as hereafter he would discouer and inhabit. The which his request the Emperour graunted, upon certaine condicions and Articles of agreement, drawen and engrosed accordinge as tofore his Maiestie had done with other Captaynes, in affaires of Discouery. With this order taken, hee returned to PANAMA, taking with him *Hernando Pizarro*, *Ihon Pizarro*, *Gonsalo Pizarro*, and *Francisco Martin* of ALCANTARA, his Brethren, among the which *Hernando Pizarro*, and *Ihon Pizarro* were only legittimate Bretheren, of Father and Mother, Sonnes vnto *Gonsalo Pizarro*, the long Cittizen of TRUGILLIO, who had sometime beene Captaine of Infanterie in the Kingdome of NAUARRA: *Don Francisco Pizarro* and *Gonsalo Pizarro* were his naturall Children, but not by one Wife, and *Francisco Martin* was his sonne in Law. Besides these afore named, hee carryed many others with him for the pretended discouery, but the most of them were of the Citties of TRUGILLIO and CASERES, and other villages of the Prouince, called *Estremadura*.

In this sorte with prosperous Nauigation, he arriued and came to his desired place of PANAMA, and there began to provide the things necessary for the Discouery, in the name of the first Companye: Although there was some discorde betweene *Don Francisco* and *Don Diego de Almagro*, because *Don Diego* received great unkindnesse that *Don Francisco* had brought to passe his desire with the Emperour, and obtained the Title and name of Gouvernour, and cheefe Discouerer of all the dominion of PERU, without any remembraunce made of him, nor yet of his seruice, although the sayd *Don Diego* had been one of the cheefest adventurers, and also personally partaker of the paynes. But yet notwithstandinge *Don Francisco* perceauing by his countenance how the matter went, did comfort and perswade him, that the Emperour at that time when he was with his Maiestie, pleased not to take order for him, to remunerate his trauaile accordingly although hee did in his behalfe require the same; but notwithstandinge hee gave vnto him for his parte, both his worde and promise to renounce the Office and Title of cheefe Discouerer in him, and also would sende to the Emperour to beseech his Maiestie to confirme the same. With which faire wordes, *Don Diego* was somewhat pacified: so that now wee will leaue from that matter, and speake of the Nauie and other necessities concerning the Discouery: and also declare the scituacion of the Prouince of PERU, and the notable thinges of that Countrey with the customes of the People.

¶ Of the people which inhabite vnder the Equinoctiall  
 Lyne, and other notable thinges which are in that  
 partes. Chap. 4.

THE Lande of PERU whereof this Historie (God willing) shall treat did begin from the Equinoctiall forward vntil the Meridian, the people which inhabited under the Equinoctiall and neare there vnto, are in Phisnomie like Iewes, they pronounce their speech in the throat like vnto MORISCOS, they are inclined to the sin of ZODOME: by reason whereof they are rigorous to their Wiues, and make small accompt of them: they weare no kinde of garment sauing their priuie partes, which are couered: Their Wemen do plough and sow the ground, they grinde their Graine, and therof make their provision of foode: their Corne is called in their Ilande language MAIZ, and in PERU it is called ZARA. The men weare short Shyrtes, which come to the Nauill, and their priuy partes are vncouered, they haue their heads shorne with a Crowne, like Friers, and the hinder and forepart of the heade is shauen, and the haire somewhat long on the sides.

They delight much to weare Jewels of Golde in their Eares and nostrilles, and also Emralds which are onely found in those partes: But those Indians would neuer discover the Mynes or vaines of them, although it is certainly beleueed that there is their Origen, because they finde in their earthen vessel many small stones sticking in the sides.

They vse about their legges and armes Braslets of Bedestones, of Golde, Plate, and Turkies, and small



Periwincles shelles, both white and red, and they permit not any kinde of brauery to their Women. This Countrey is exceeding hot, and apt to infirmitie, cheefly a kinde of Poxe which are very venemous, and breed in the face and other places on the body, rooted deepe, which are (in manner) of worse quality then the French Poxe.

In this Prouince they have their ydolatrous Temples with their doores to the East warde, with Curtains of a clothe made of Cotten Wooll: In euery Temple were two Images, made of the bignesse and likenes of black Goates, before the which, they vsed always to burne a kinde of Wood, of a maruailous sweet smell: The Trees of this odiferous wood growe in that Countrey, and by incision of the Barke they distill a maruailous sweete lycor, wherewith if any annoynt a dead bodye, the carkas corrupteth not. There are also in the Temples Images of the figure of great Serpents, which they adore, and worship: besides these Idols euery of those people had a perticular God, according to his trade and office, which they also worshipped. The fishermen had the Dogge Fishe called TIBURON, in great veneracion, and the Raungers or Hunters had like likewise their God, accordinge to the game which they most esteemed: and in like manner euery sort of people accordingly. But in some Temples in the Villages called PASAO they vsed to have hanging on the Pillers of the Temple, the dead carkases of Men and Children sacrificed, or els their skinnes tanned in such order that the euill smel or sauour was taken away: Also their skulles were in suche manner placed, but first with a certayne coction,

*Sweet Trees  
of a straunge  
Balme.*

*The decking  
of the Idols  
temple.*

they were dressed, that they were shrunk to the smalenesse of a mans fist, and then nayled on the saide Pillers, or Walles of the Temple.

This Countrey of his own nature or property is dry, although there it raineth daily, there are few runninge Waters which are sweete, so that their cheef drinke is of Welles, or of Water preserued in Cesternes, which they call AQUEYES.

Their houses or buildings are of great Canes which there doth grow: The Golde which there is found is base, and of few Qarets: there is also small quantity of fruit. Their Nauigation is with CANOAS, made out of the bodyes of Trees, as is afore declared, and also vpon Raffes of Timber: All the Sea coaste is full replenished with Fishe, and great aboundance of Whales: In some Townes of this Prouince, called CARAQUE: they had vpon their Temple doores the Images or figures of men, cloathed like the vestment of a Deacon.

¶ Of the vaynes of Pitche, which are at the Cape called *Destahelena*, and of the Gyants which in time past inhabited there. Chap. 5.

N Eare vnto this Prouince, is a poynt or cape of Land which the Spanyardes named DESTAHELENA, which lieth into the Sea, where are found certayne springes of Pitche, or Tarre, and it serueth for the same purpose, for Ships: Not far from the said CAPE, the

Indians of that Countrey doth affirme, that sometime dwelt certaine Gyantes, who were of maruailous great stature, in comparison to foure times the bignesse of a <sup>Giants.</sup> meane man of stature, but they knew not from whence their Origen was, yet their foode and maintenance was like vnto theirs, but only Fish was their principall food, because their cheefe delight was in fishinge, and their Boates were raffles of Timber, which each of them vsed seuerally of their owne proper, because these raffles were made of such manner, that they could not well carry moe then one of those Gyantes.

Their cheefe pleasure was, when any had taken any greate Fish, because thereby their store was the better, for each of them would easely eate more than thirtie Indians: they vsed no kinde of cloathing, because of the difficultie to make their Garmentes.

These Gyants were exceedinge crewell, for without any cause they slew many of the poore Indians, by mean whereof they were much feared.

The Spanyards saw in the Porte called PUERTO VIEJO, two Images of those Gyantes, the one of a man, and the other of a Woman: There is a certaine kinde of Cronicle, or remembrance among those Indians, which was left vnto them by their fore Fathers, of sundry particularities of those Gyantes, especially of their consummation. They also held opinion how a young man came downe from Heauen, shyning like the Sunne, and fought with those Giants, throwing flames of fier at them with suche vehemency, that the tokens and signes thereof remained on the hard stone, and as yet said they, vntil this daye the same doth remaine: at

which time they wente retyringe to a Valley, where hee made a finall ende of them. But notwithstandinge these Indians tale, no perfect credit was giuen unto the circumstance thereof vntil the Captaine *Ihon de Holmos* was appointed Lieutenant of the Governour, in the Port called PUERTO VIEJO in Anno 1543. who beinge informed of those antiquities, commaunded certaine of his men to digge in that Valley, where they found marvailous great Ribbes, and other bones, which if they had not ioyned with the skuls it would have been thought vncredible they should haue beene mennes bones: so that the matter beeing thoroughly examined, the Indians opinion concerning such Gyantes, was trew, and some of the Teethe found in those skulles, were sent to diuerse places in PERU: some of the sayde Teethe, which were there found, were of three fingers broad, and of foure fingers longe, which was reported by witnesse of sight, who were men of credit, of the Spanish Nacion. By records also, that sort of People were knowen to be offenders in the sin against Nature, called ZODOMY, by reason whereof, the Iustice deuine, permitted them no longer to liue, but rather the Almighty sente his Angel to consume them, as in ZODOM and other places.

Gyants  
teeth.

Aswel in this point as all other antiquities, which is knowen and found in PERU, the only difficultie is to be presupposed which is in the verefying thereof, because that the naturals of that Countrey knew neither wryting nor reading, nor yet certaine pictures which the Indians of new Spayne used in lue of bookes, so that their recordes or registers did cheefly consist in memory from

to another : But their accompts or recknings of time, were made upon a string or coard made of cotton woolle, which the Indians called QUIPPPOS, on the which they kept their reconing by making of knots on those coardes, with a difference ascending from one to ten, and so vpwards accordingly. And alwaies the coard was of the colours of the thing which was ment to be signified, so that in every Prouince were Offycers who had the charge to keepe the thinges in memorie with those coardes, which was called QUIPPO CAMAYOS, so that many publike houses were found full of those coardes, and the saide officers could by them easily declare any matter concerning their effecte, although it had beene of many yeres past.

¶ Of the people and things that are beyond the Equinoctiall line, toward the Meridian, along the sea Coast. Chap. 6.

**B**Eyonde the Equinoctiall line towarde the Meridian, standeth an Iland 12. leagues distant from the towne of Boro, neere adioyning to the firme land. The which Ilande is called PUMA, and hath in it abundance of sundrie sortes of beastes : and store of deere, and much fresh fish in swete waters. In time past this Iland was replenished with people, and maintained warres with all the townes about their frontiers : but principallye they were enemies to the inhabitants of TUMBEZ, which standeth 12. leagues distant from them. They

Raffes.

were lords of many Raffes, for their nauigation : these Raffes were made of long light poules, bound one upon another, so that alwayes those which were placd vppermost, were odde, as ordinarily, fiue, seuen, or nine, and the middle powle was longer than the rest, as a Ruther to guyde the Raffe, and thereon sate the rower, so that the raffe is made like an open hand, euen as one finger is longer than another : And on the toppe are planks layde to kepe soldiers or passengers from wetting.

Indian  
decepts.

There are Raffes that 50. men and 3. horses may wel be carryed on them. They vse for them as wel sayles, as oares, the Indians are very good Marrayners for such kind of vessels, although it hath happened that when Spaniards haue sailed on those Raffes, the Indians suttely haue vndone the ropes wherwith the timber was bound together, and so ech peece sodenly to separate from other : By meanes whereof many Christians haue peryshed, and the Indians saued themselves vpon the powles, without any other thing to succour them, by reason that they can swim exceeding well.

Their cheefe weapons for the warres were slinges, clubbes, and hatchets, made of siluer and copper. They had many speares or lavelings, with the sharpe poynts of them made of base golde. Both the men and women vsed to were many jewels, and ringes of golde. Their ordinarie vessell was wrought and made of siluer and golde. The Lorde of that Ilande was greatly feared among his people, hee was also exceeding ielious of his wiues, in so much that all those seruitours which attend vpon them had their noses cut of, and likewise their genitall members.

In another litle Iland adioyning to the same, they found a house and a gardeine plot or orchard within the same, hauing little trees and plantes therein, made of siluer and gold. Ouer against this Iland in the firme land were certaine Townes, the which by displeasure taken by the Lord of PERU, he commaunded that as well men as women should haue their upper teeth drawn out, of which toothless people vntil this day are some living. Proceeding forward beyond TUMBEZ toward the meridian, for the space of 500. leagues along the coast, and ten leagues into the mayne, there never rayneth, thundreth, or falleth any lightning or thunderbolt: But passing the sayd ten leagues within the mayne land distant from the sea, it both rayneth and thundreth, and haue both winter and summer in their due seasons, and in the same manner as in Spaine. But when it is winter in the mountaynes, then it is summer on the sea coast, and the like contrariwise. So that the length of that coast which is already discouered of the land of PERU, which taketh his beginning and is accompted from the citie of PASTO vnto the Prouince of CHILI, is one thousand eight hundred leagues, as large as the leagues of CASTILLIA, and throughout the sayd Countrey lieth a long mountayne or ridge of hilles very troublsome to passe, which in some places doth stand distant from the sea 15. yea, and 20. leagues, and in some places the branches of that montayne approacheth nere the sea brim.

A Strange Orchard.

A sharpe punishment.

A strange thing.

The length of Peru 1800. Leagues.

So that all which as yet is discouered of PERU, is to be vnderstand by two names, that is to say, all the ground betweene the mountaines and the sea, is called

plaines: and all the rest is called mountaines. The plaines are drie and the most part sands: for as before is declared, there it neuer rayneth, nor yet hath there been founde any spring or fountaine, sauing nere the sea side are 4. or 5. aqueys or cesterns, the water wherof is saltish. But the people doe prouide themselves of water of the Riuers which descend out of the mountaines. The cause of those riuers is the thawing of the snow and rayne which commeth from the sayd hilles where very fewe naturall springs are found: These riuers are distant one from another, some 10. and some 15. or 20. leagues: but the most ordinarie are of seuen and eight leagues: so that commonly the trauelers doo appointe their iorneyes accordingly, to come vnto their fresh water. Some of these riuers are a league broad, and some less, according to the disposition of the ground. Along those Riuer sides are faire prospects of trees and fruites, and ground conuenient for the Indians to sowe their corne called MAIZ.

After the Spaniards began to inhabite this contrey, they sowed wheate, all the saide plaine grounde they vsed to water with slewces, conueyed out of the Ryuers, in which arte they have great experience, and industry: the beauty of those Riuers, with Trees and fruites aforesaid grow along the said Riuers, euen from the Sea, vnto the Mountaines: those Riuers comming from the hilles, discendinge with such vehemency, that the Spanyardes could not passe them on Horsebacke, especially the Riuer called SANCTA, and many others: so that those which iorney in those Playnes, they keep



all along the Sea Coaste, but in the Winter season it is daungerous trauailinge that coaste, by reason of the exceedinge great currantes of those Riueres that the waye is not vadeable on Horsebacke, but only on Raffes, or els with a bundell of Gourdes, which they vse to binde before their breasts and vnder their armes, and an Indian Pilot goeth before swimming to leade the way.

The grounde along these Riueres is exceeding fruitefull, as we haue declared: where Wheat and Maiz groweth in aboundance, without respecting any time of sowing.

These Indians dwell not in houses, but their abidyng is vnder Trees and shadowes made for the purpose. Their women were garments made of Cotton woll, like vnto gownes which come downe to their feete. The men were shirtes downe to the knees, and certein Mantels vpon the same, and although their attire is after one sorte, they differ in the attire of their heads, accordyng to the vse of euery countrey: some vse their haire bounde up with laces of woll, some with one lace, and other with many laces of sundry colours, so there is none but hath some deuce in his hed, and in euery Prouince of a seuerall kinde.

All the Indians of the Playnes are deuided into three sortes, the one are called YNGAS, another sorte are called TALLANES, and the third MOCHICAS: in euery Prouince they differ in speeche, notwithstandinge the Noble men, called CASCIKES, besides, their natural speeche, doo all generally vnderstande the language of the Cittie of Cusco, because the Kinge of PERU, called

*Guaynacana*, father of King *Atabaliba*, thought it a base thinge that his Subjectes, especially noble men should talke with him by interpretors, wherupon hee commaunded that all the *CASCIKES* of his Countrey and dominions, and their Brethren and Kinsemen shoulde sende their Children to serue and attende on the Kinge in his Court, vnder the colour to learne the courtly speeche: but cheafly the Kinges intente was to assure his countrey with the principall men of his Kingdome, in hauing their children in pledge. But bee it as it will, by this meanes it came to passe, that all the Nobilitie of his Lane, vnderstoode and could speake the language vsed in Court, as in Flaunders the Gentilmen and others speake the French tongue: so that in conclusion, any Spanyarde that attained to the Cusco Speech, mought wel passe throughout the dominions of *PERU*, aswell in the Playnes as in the Mountaynes, to vnderstand and to be vnderstood among the cheefest.

¶ Of the ordinary Windes which blow in the Plaines,  
and the cause of drynesse. Chap. 7.

With great reason, those which reade this History, may stande in doubt of the cause, why it rayneth not in the Playnes of *PERU*, as before is specified, for by eident tokens, should bee thought that those thinges could not bee true, by reason of the growen Riuers which fal into the Sea, and commonly engender moysture and vapors, comming out of the Mountaynes,

hauing their beginning of the continuall Snow, which there abideth, wherof relacion is made before, yea, and the sayd Hilles neuer want clowdy weather, intermixed with rayne. The natural reason thereof, found out by such as diligently haue sought the secret therof: which is, that in all those Playnes, and Sea coast, all the whole <sup>Note.</sup> yeare bloweth one only Winde, which the Mariner call SILVESTRE, which runneth alonge that coast with such force, that the Cloudes and Vapors haue no rest in those playnes nor Sea coast, to come vnto the region of the ayer, and from the high Mountaines: The cloudes and vapors, do then like another Heauen, to those which are beneathe in the Playnes, and aboue them agayne, is is as cleare as Christall: and this onely winde also causeth the Seagate or Currant to runne alwaies Northward, although some men are of another opinion, which is, that where the South sea commeth to fall into the mouth of the Straight of MAGALANUS, beeing there so narrowe, and exceedeth not the bredth of two Leagues, so that the greate power of the water can not there have yssue, and also their encounteringe with the Northen Sea, which likewise disturbeth his passage: so that of force it maketh reflection and recoyle backward, and so forceth the Currant toward the North. And here riseth another inconuenience, which is, that the Nauigation from PANAMA to PERU, is with such difficultie, because the winde is always contrary, and also the most part of the yeare the Currant likewise, so that the Saylers do sayle continually by the bowlinge against the fury of the winde, or else it were not possible to sayle that Coast.

All along the coast of PERU are great number of fishe, and many Zeale fishes.

From the Riuer of TUMBEZ forward are found none of those great Lizartes of which we haue spoken. But some holde opinion the cause is, that the countrey, forward is more temperate, and those beastes are louers of heate, but the most certaine reason is, because the Riuers therabout are of more swifter currant, and suffereth them not to breede, for their ordinarie breeding is in the calme places of Riuers.

Now at this day in all the length of the playnes are Villages and Townes of Christians, and fine Cities, the first is called PUERTO VIEJO, which standeth very nere vnto the Equinoctiall. This Citie hath but few inhabitants because the countrey is poore and apt for diseases, yet there are some mines of Emraldes, as is before declared. Fifteene leagues with in the Mayne is another Citie called saint MIGHEL, which in the Indian spech they call PURA: This is a pleasant soyle and fruitfull, but no mine of golde nor plate. This place is apte for sore eyes, and few or none that passeth that way escapeth that disease.

Threescore leagues forward along the cost standeth another citie in a valley called TRUGILLIO, and is distant from the sea, two leagues. The porte or harbor belonging to this citie is perillous. This citie is placed in a plaine plot, nere vnto a Riuer side, and is abundantly provided of wheate, MAIZ and cattell. It is also exceeding wel built, there are in this citie aboue three hundred housholds of Spanyardes.

Foure score Leagues forward, standeth another

Cittie, two Leagues distant from a Porte of the Sea, which is an excellent good Roade for Shippes, it is scituated in a Valley called LYMA, and named the Cittie of the Kings, because the day of Epiphany it was begun to inhabite, it is placed in a plaine ground, near unto a mighty Riuer. The Countrey there about is plentifull of Corne, and many sortes of fruites and cattell: the building of this Cittie is such, that all the streates doo meete in a faire large place, from the which a man may see through euery streat into the Feeldes: the dwelling is maruailous healthfull, because it standeth in a temperat Climat, and not vexed throughout the yeare with neither heate nor colde extreamely. The hoatest season of the yeare is more temperate than in Spayne: for in the time of their heate in Lyma, which is in Somer, there falleth euery morninge a sweete Dew, which is nothing hurtful to mans health, but rather profitable, for such as have the head ache vse to wash their heads with the Dewe water, and therewith finde great ease.

The Cittie  
called Reis  
in the  
Prouince of  
Lyma.

All Spanish fruit groweth and prospereth wel in this Soyle, especially Orenge, Sidrons, Lemons, Figges, Powngarnardes and Vines, wherof had beene there aboundance, if the alteracions in the Land had not disturbed their plantinge, for experience hath shewed that the very Kernell of the Grape hath perduced faire Vynes: There groweth also greate store of Pot earbes, such as ordinarily grow in Spayne: euery house hath belonging vnto it a little runninge water, or Brooke, brought in by conueyance of slewce, which water is sufficient to driue a mill, although along the Riuer side

they have their common milles where the Spanyardes grinde their corne.

This citie is iudged the most pleasant dwelling in all the land, because the porte and roade for shippes maketh the Citie to be of great contractation for Marchants: So that the people of all Cities, Townes, and Villages, within the maine lande vse to come thither for their prouision and furniture.

From the mines of this Prouince is brought greate aboundance of golde and silver. The scituation is in the middell of the land, as yet discovered by reason whereof the Emperour his Maiestie placed there a chauncery royall, and Iudges to decide his subiectes causes, which also causeth the greater resorte of people. It is thought that in processe of time this Citie will increase to be of marueilous fame and greatness. At this day there are about five hundred houtholds of Spanyardes, and euery house hath a greater compasse of ground then the houses built in Spayne: so that these 500. houses seeme bigger then 1500. in CASTILLIA, by reason that the streetes are broad, and hath also a place of great compasse in the middest of the citie, ech house hath in fronte 800. foote, and twise as much large. Their buylding is but of one storie high, for want of timber to builde a height, and yet that timber within three yeres beginneth to rotte and consume, yet notwithstanding the low building, the houses are sumptuous and of great Maiestie. The walles are of five foote broade, and the plot whereon the houses stand are raysed of like height with earth, by reason wherof, the houses seeme of reasonable height. The Roofes of

those houses are made of rafters layde crossewise, and vpon the Timber is layde for seeling gallante paynted mattes, like vnto those which are made in *ALMERIA*, in the Kingdome of *GRANADA* and vpon that seeling are layd boughes, so that the loadgings are high, fresh, and not troubled with the sunne: and as for the water, they neede not to care: for as before is declared, it neuer rayneth in those plaines.

Thirty Leagues from this Cittie along the Coast, is another Cittie, intituled the faire Towne of *AROQUIPA*, <sup>Aroquipa.</sup> which hath in it 300. houses of Spanyardes: this also is a healthfull soyle, and abundant of all kinde of Vituall, but it standeth 12. Leagues from the Seacoast, by mean wherof it is thought that the Towne wil encrease with inhabitantes, for the Riuer by which it standeth, is so good and faire, that Shippes laden with Merchandize may come vp the Riuer, even to the Cittie: and from this Place the Cittie of *Cusco* is serued of all things needeful, and so likewise the Prouince of *CHARCAS*, from which places commeth the most people of that Countrey, by reason of the contractacion of the Mynes of *POTOSI*: Also great quantitis of Plate is brought thither, to be laden in the Shippes backe againe in returne to the Cittie of the Kinges, or *PANAMA*, which is a great helpe, for to auoyde the carriage by land, beeing very daungerous and troublesome in the highe wayes, since the time that the new Orders or Lawes set forth by the Emperour, were executed.

From this Cittie, men may trauaile forward alonge the Sea coaste, for the space of 400. Leagues, vnto the

Chili.

Prouince that the Gouvernour *Pedro de Valdivia* did discover and inhabite, called CHILI; which was much as to say in the Indian tongue, Colde, by reason of the extreame colde, which the trauellers passe in the way thither, as in the History shal be declared hereafter, when the iorney made by the Cheefe Discoverer *Don Diego de Almagro* shal be spoken of: so that now is vnderstood the scituacion and habitation of the parte of PERU, and the Playnes thereof, wherewithall is likewise to be considered, that the Sea coaste is cleane, and without daunger of Rocks, as far as hither vnto hath been discovered, nor yet any furious or tempestuous weather doth vere that coaste of the South Sea, and therefore it may well be called, the quiet and Golden Sea, yea, and moreover, anye Shippe along that coast may with one Ankor ride in safety, with out daunger of any winde.

¶ Of the qualities and nature of the Mountaynes of *Peru*,  
and of the habitacions and dwellinges of Christians  
and Indyans. Chap. 8.

THE Indians which dwel in the Mountains doo differ much from those which dwell in the Plaines, or low countrey both in strength, knowledge, and liuinge: for in the Mountaynes, their dwelling is in the houses couered with earth, their shirtes and garmentes are wrought of sheepes wooll, which there doo breed: they weare nothing on their head, but have their haire laced with a stringe. The Wemen weare



garments without sleeues, gyrded with woollen gyrdels, which maketh them long wasted : they also weare certayn Mantels ouer their heds, which are pinned about their neckes, with pinnes of Golde or Plate, accordinge to the habilitie of euery one : those pinnes are called Indian pins. in their language Topos, because the heads are great, plaine, and flat, and the sides and points exceedinge sharpe : These Wiues doo helpe their Husbandes in the labour and tillage of the ground, nay I may say, that their paines is greatest in all seruice. These Wemen of complexion are white, and well fauoured, exceeding much, the wemen of the Plaines : and so likewise the countrey doth much differ, the one from the other, because the Mountaynes doth bring forth great aboundance of Grasse, and hath much fresh water, of which and from which, the Riuers proceedes, which runneth downe into the Playnes : there are also many kinde of Flowers and pleasant greene plottes, with sundry kinde of Earbes, and sundry sortes Trees, of maruailous fruites, so pleasaunt to taste, that in all Spayne there is no better : there are also Wilde Walnut trees, and Willowes : these Indians haue many wilde Sheepe, and other very tame and domestical : they haue also Deare, and sundry other kinde of Beastes, and great number of Foxes : The Indians are great Hunting. Hunters, and call the game CHICO, but when they are disposed to make a generall feast of huntinge, they ioyne together foure or fve hundred Indians, and place them selues one by one in the compasse of the ground which they meane to hunte, which oftentimes is two or three Leagues in circuite, and then they come

inclosing foote by foote, by the sound of certain songes, which they vse to singe for that purpose, so that at the end they ioine altogether in a round, and take each other hand in hand, and some arme in arme, so that they bring in among them a great number of siluester Beastes, euen as though they were penned in a Pound, and then they kil and make their choice at their pleasure: but the exceedinge showtes, and hallowinge which they make, doth not only feare the wilde Beastes, but also oftentimes with the same noyse they amaze the Partridges, and other Foule, that easily they may be taken by hand.

Fouls.

There are also in the Mountaynes, Lyons and great blacke Beares, Wilde Cattes, and Apes of diuerse sorts, and many other kinde of Wilde Beastes, unknowen to our Nation: The Foule which most frequent the plaines and Mountaines, are Eagles, Doues, and Turtle Doues, Quailes, Parats, Hawkes, white and russet, Nightingals, and diuerse other sortes of faire and gallant Foule: alonge the Sea coast are Buytres, that hauing their whinges spread contayne .15. and .16. palmes or spannes from the point of whinge to whinge: these Buytres feede vpon Zeales when they come on Lande, to sleepe and refresh them selues, then come the Buytres, and season some on the feete, and some on the tayle, and lay such holde on him, that hee cannot stirre whilst other plucke out his eyes, and then they feede on the carkas: there is another sort of foule called *ALCATRACES*, which are like vnto Hens, although much exceeding in greatnes, for his throat will holde three gallons of corne, and those all along the coast of

the South Sea are abundance, at the least for the space of two thousand leagues and more, the cheefe feeding of these fowles are fish. They haue also another marueylous propertie, which is: They will smell the carkas of a dead man a farre of, so that they wil enter thirty and forty leagues into the land to seeke the dead bodies. The flesh of these foules are of a marueylous euil smell, and hath happened that some for want of foode haue eaten of them, wherof they haue dyed, as of a rancke poyson.

Here before is declared, how in these Mountaines there rayneth, hayleth, and snoweth, and in fine, extreme in colde, yet notwithstanding from those high hilles are valleyes descending so deepe, that it may be thought incredible to some to speake therof. In which valleyes, the heat also is marueylous, and there groweth a certaine herbe called Coca, which the Indians doe esteeme *Coca*. more than golde or siluer: the leaues wherof are like unto *ZUMAKE*, the vertue of this herbe knowen by experience, is, that any hauing of those leaves in his mouth, hath neuer hunger nor thirst.

In some places of those Mountaines are no trees at all, so that wayfaring men which passe that way vse to make their fire of turues, which they finde exceeding good for that purpose.

There are also vaynes of earth of sundrie coloures and vaynes of golde and Plate: wherof the Indians had vnderstandinge and could melte the same better, and with lesse coste than the Christians: they also vsed in the high hilles to make litle Fornaces, with their mouthes toward the Meridian, wheras the winde most

ordinary doth blow, and then they lay in the same Fornaces the mettall, with Sheepes dounge, and coales, so that the winde doth kindle the fier, and the mettall melteth and cindreth the Golde and Siluer, and yet vnto this day is seene the great aboundance of Silver, which in this sort is molten in the Mynes of Potosi, which could not otherwise bee wrought with Bellowes: so that the Indians are the cheefe melters with their small furnaces, which they cal GUAYRAS, in their language, and is as much as to saye, as winde, because the winde doth kindle their Fornaces.

This Countrey is so fruitful, that it yeeldeth for on bushell of Wheate sowed, 150. yea, and sometime 200. and an hundred for one is ordenary, although they haue no Ploughes to till the ground, but vse to turne it vp with shouels, and so the Indians vse to sow: and likewise they make holes in the ground with a wooden Pin, and put therein Wheat, in such sorte as they vse to set Beanes in Spayne. All kinde of Gardaine earbes, prospereth exceedingly: The Indians foode is cheefely boyled Maiz, and toasted, in lue of bread, and Deare flesh dried, and also drye fishe, and sundry kindes of Rootes, which they call IUCA, and AXIS, AMOCES, PAPAS, and such like, with many kinde of earbes: They also use a certaine kinde of Beueredge in stead of Wine, which they make of Maiz, and the manner is, they lay their Maiz in Water, in certaine earthen Vessels, which they keepe vnder earth, and there it boyleth, and besides the whole Maiz, they put therunto a certain quantity of ground Maiz, the which one Neighbour lendeth to another, as we vse to lende Leuen for Bread.

They hold opinion, that the standing water maketh better and more stronger beueredge, than the running water : This drinke is commonly called CHICHA in the Ilande Language, and in the PERU speeche it is called ACISA : of this drinke there is both white and red, according to the colour of the graine wherof it is made. But it is of greater force than any Wine, to overcome the braine, and to make drunkardes : but yet notwithstandinge if the Indians may haue Spanish Wine, they would not care for their owne naturall drinke. They vse also another sorte of drinke, made of a small fruite which grow upon certaine Trees called MOLLES : this drinke is not so precious as the CHICHA.

¶ Of the Citties of Christians which are in the  
Mountaines of *Peru*. Chap. 9.

IN the Mountaines of PERU, are sundry places of habitation of Christians, which begin at the Cittie of QUITO, which standeth foure degrees beyond the Equinoctiall : this Cittie in times past was a pleasante thinge, and plentifull of corne and cattell, and in the yeare of 1544 and 45. there was discovered rich Mynes of Gold, wherupon the Cittie began to inlarge his bowndes with inhabitants, and flourished vntill the fury of the cruell warres among the Spanyardes began, which was the cause that the most parte of all the Cittizens were slayne by the handes of *Gonsalo Pizarro* and his Captaines, because they did both favour and

serue the Vize-Roy *Blasco Nunez Vela* all the time that he there abode, as hereafter particularly shal be declared: From this Cittie is no poblation of Christians, in the Mountaines, vntill you come to the Prouince of the BRACAMOROS, which was discouered by Captaine Ihon *Porasell*, and Captaine *Vergara*, who built there certaine Villages, to the intent that from thence they ment to discover forwardes: But these Villages came to ruine, because *Gonsalo Pizarro* took those Captaines and their men to ayde him in his Warres. This Discouery was first taken in hande by the order and consent of the lycenciat *Vaca de Castro*, who was gouernour of that Prouince, and sent Captayne *Porsell* by the coast of Saint MIGHELL, and farther vp into the Mayne, he sent *Vergara*, by the Prouince of the CHACHAPOYAS, thinking that they should haue made their entries by seuerall places, although it so happened that both the sayd Captaynes met in their iorney, and fell to discorde about their Discouery, concerning to which of them it should appertaine, so that they were both sent for, by the Gouernour *Vaca de Castro* to pacifie and take over the causes of their contencion, so that they were of the first Captaynes, that were at the beginninge of the Warres, in the Cittie of the Kinges, in the seruice of the Vice-roy: and after that the sayd Vice-roy was taken prisoner, they abode with *Gonsalo Pizarro* and left of their proceeding in the Discovery.

This Discovery reached 160. leagues from the Citie of QUITO, along the Mountaines, so that other 80. leagues for ward standeth the Prouince called CHICAPUYAS where is a Towne of Christians, intituled

LEUANTO, and is a fruitfull soyle for all kinde of victuall, Leuanto.  
and hath also reasonable rich Mines. It is wel fortified  
by reason that it standeth high, and is compassed with a  
marueylous deepe valley, wherein is a Riuer that runneth  
almost in circuite of the hill where the Towne standeth.

The Marshall *Alonso de Alvarado*, was the first that  
did inhabite this Prouince, vnto whom it was com-  
mended. Beyond this prouince about 60. leagues,  
standeth another Towne of Chriscians called *Guanuco*, Guanuco.  
which was buylt by the commendement of the Licentiat  
*Vaca de Castro* who named it LEON, because hee him Leon.  
selfe was borne in the Citie of LEON in Spayne. This  
Towne is well provided of victuals, and is thought to  
be abundant of Mines, especially towarde that parte,  
which Prince *Inga* holdeth, the people wherof were  
occupied in warres in the Prouince called ANDES, as  
herafter shal be declared: So that beyond this place  
there is not in the Mountaine any village of Christians  
vntil you come to GUAMANGA, which was named Saint  
*Ihon de Victoria*, and standeth distant from GUANCO  
sixtie leagues.

This Village is but meanly inhabited of Christians,  
but it is thought that it will be better if the Prince *Inga*  
cease from his warres, who hath vsurped a great part  
of the best ground thereunto belonging, and specially  
where the best Mines are, and greatest quantitie of the  
rich herbe called COCA. From this Towne of GUA-  
MANGA, vnto the citie of Cusco is distance 80. leagues:  
In the which are many plots of Rocky and troublesome  
way to passe, which causeth great perill vnto the way-  
faring man. The Citie of Cusco before the Christians

comming thither, was the cheefest seat and court of the Indian Kings of all the whole Prouince, so that from that princely Citie was gouerned and ruled all those countreis and Prouinces here before declared, and hereafter shall be declared. To this citie all the Cascikes or noble men resorted from all places of the Empire to bring their tributes appertaining to the Prince, as also to deale about perticular affayres, and to demaund justice in their suites one with another.

In all the whole dominions of that countrey, there was not any place of habitacion that had the Maiestie or manner of a cittie, but onely Cusco, where was a fayre Fortresse, wrought of square stones, which were so huge and great, that it was a wonder how they were brought thither, by Indian strength of men, without helpe of Oxen, Muyles, or other Beastes: and yet there are some one stone, that tenne yoake of Oxen could not with their strength moue them from the place from whence they were brought: and the houses wherein the christians dwell in at this day, are the very same that the Indians made for their owne dwellinge: so that some of those houses are repaired, and other increased of the same fashion. The cittie was deuided into foure partes, in such order, that all such as came thither to dwel or to lodge in, Kinge *Inga* commaunded that they should lodge or inhabite in the streat which lay toward the place from whence they came. Those which came from the South parte were called *COLLASINO*, by the name of a Towne called *COLLAO*: and hee which came from the North, was called *CHINCHASUYO*, by reason of a Prouince which lay that way calleb



CHINCHA, which is now appertaininge to the Emperour, and is uninhabited and nothing worth, and in this manner they name accordingly the other two partes which lyeth East, and West, ANDESUYO and CONDESUYO so that no Indian might dwell or lodge in any other streat, but only in that streat which lay towards the place from whence he came, upon a great penalty.

All the countrey neare adioyning to the cittie, is exceeding plentiful of all kinde of victuals, and exceeding healthfull, for it is approued that any sound man of body that commeth into this countrey, doth long continue in health. It is inuironed with many rich Mines of golde, out of the which hath bene gathered the infinite summe, which vntill this day hath bene brought into Spayne, although now since the discovery of the Mines of POTOSI, they leaue the gold mines, and worke in those siluer Mines, because therein they finde a greater gaine then in the golde workes, and also is gotten with lesse danger both of Indians and Christians, which deale in those affaires.

From the citie of Cusco to the Towne called VILLA <sup>Villa de Plata.</sup> DE PLATA, which standeth in the Prouince of CHARCAS, are 150. leagues and more, and in the midway standeth a great prouince in the plaine called COLLAO, which is about fiftie leagues long. The principalst part thereof is called CHIRQUITO, which now appertaineth to his Maiestie, And being so great a peece of ground vnhabited of christians the Licenciat *De la Gasca* in Anno. 45. commaunded to buylt a village in the prouince of COLLAO.

This town called VILLA DE PLATA, is a place of extreme colde, and none like vnto it in al the moun-

taines, by meane of which colde there are few dwellers, but those which abide there are marueilous ritch, and those few inhabitants of this towne abide the most parte of the yere in the mines which are in the circuite of PORCO and POTOSI, as hereafter shal be declared.

From VILLA DE PLATA entringe inwards to the maine on the left hand Eastward was discovered by commaundement of the Licenciat VACA DE CASTRO, who sent for that purpose Captaine *Diego de Rojas*, and *Philip Gutierrez* to the Prouince which now is called by the name of DIEGO DE ROJAS, and is reported to be a good and wholesome countrey, abundant of al necessary victuall, howbeit the tresure of Mines expected, was not there found, for which consideration Captaine *Domingo de Italia*, and his companions came into PERU, in Anno 49. so that in conclusion, they trauailed all the Lande that is betweene the South Sea, and the Northe Sea, at the time when they wente up the Ryuer of Plate, in discouery of the Northen Coast.

This is the scituation of all the Lande discouered, and inhabited throughout the Prouince of PERU, toward the South Sea, presupposing the Discouery along the South coast, without entry into the Mayne, because in the discouery of the Mayne, the certaintie is not yet knowen, by reason of the troublsome and perrilous wayes, that leadeth the course both with colde, double cragged Hilles, destitute of victuals, and al comfort for man : yet neuerthelesse the Spanyardes would not haue feared these great perrils, if they had not doubted the gayne of treasure, which they thought was not to bee had in that proceedinge.

Spanyards.

¶ Of the opinion which the Indians had concerning their creation and other things. Chap. 10.

WHere as the Indians had no kinde of writing, as before is declared, they knew not the Origen of their creation, nor yet the ende which the Worlde had, at the time of Noes flodde. But accordinge to the iudgemente and heresay of their Auncestors from time to time.

These people helde opinion, that out of the partes of SEPTENTRION, came a man that had neither bone nor joynt and when hee went any whither, hee both shortned and also enlarged the way, accordinge to his owne will: hee also, said they, set up some hilles and threw downe other: and this was he, said they, that first created the Indians, but this Creator with a displeasure that hee tooke with his People of the Playnes, conuerted their countrey into Sande, and commaunded that it should never Rayne in those Playnes: Yet in the mittigacion of his wrath, hee sente them out of the Mountaynes, the Rivers to comfort them. This their God, was called among them *Con*, who was accordinge to their opinion, the childe of the Sunne and the Moone, and this *Con* was helde for their God, whom they honoured and worshipped: and it was hee, said they, that did maintayne them with earbes and siluester fruites. But afterward out of the South, came a great God, called *Pachacama*, who properly was called Creator. Who also was the Childe of the Sunne and Moone, but after his comming their God *Con* vanished away, and left his people without a Captayne, by meane

whereof *Pachacama* conuerted them into Foule, Apes, Cats, Beares, Lyons, Parrattes, and sundrye other kinde of Foules which now abound in that Countrey, and hee it was, say they, that created the Indians which are at this day, and gaue them industry to plough the ground, and to plant Trees: hee was onely holden for God and all the Principall men which deceased in that countrey, were caryed to be buried in the Prouince which is called *PACHANCAMA*, after his name. In which Prouince his cheefe abyding was, and standeth foure leagues from the City of the Kinges. This God *PACHACAMA* abode among them till the comming of the Christians into *PERU*, and after their comming he neuer more appeared, whereupon it is thought that it was some deuil which made them beleue all those vanities.

These Indians hold opinion that there was in time past an vniuersall flood, at which time their auncestors escaped in caues, which they had buylt for that purpose in the highe hilles, where, and before the flood they had layd in theyr prouision of victualles: And when they went into those caues they dammed vp the little doores wherat they entred, to defend them from the water. And when they vnderstoode that the water vanished away, they first put out their dogs, and when they returned vnwet, then were they sure that the flood was past, and then came they out of their caues, Also they say that with the moysture which remayned of the flood, came the snakes to breede, which did greatly annoy them howbeit in proces of time they were destroyed. Also, it is most true that they had intelligence of the generall flood, but they knew not that

NOE did escape in the Arke, with seuen persons, which did againe replenish the worlde: but they imagined that they escaped in the Caues, as before is declared: but yet their flood mought be particuler, as was the flood of DEUCALION.

They beleue also, that the world shall haue an ende, but before the end (they say) shall come a great drought, and shall not rayne in many yeares: and to prouide for that time of necessitie, the Noble men had great large houses built, to keepe their Graine in store, against the time of drought. When the Sun or Moone is eclipsed then they make a terrible cry, with feare, thinking that the last day is comen, and that all shall perishe: they beleue assuredly, that the Sun and the Moone shall lose their light, even as whan either of them is eclipsed.

¶ Of the Rites and Sacrifices of the Indians vsed  
among them in *Peru*. Chap. 11.

THIS people adore and worship the Sun and the Moone for Gods, and the earth for their Mother: instead of the sun, they haue in their Temples certaine stones, which they worship, and are called GUACAS, which is the name of mourninge and weeping, and euen so they weepe when they enter into their Temples, they presume not to come neare their GUACAS or Idolles, but onely such as are Ministers, appointed for that seruice, and those priests or ministers ware white garments, and when they make intercession to those

Idols, then take they certain white clothes in their hands, and prostrating themselues on the ground, they make their supplications to the idols in such language that the other Indians understand not. These priests also receaued such offerings as was offered to the idols, and buried the same in the temple, for the offerings were alwaies either gold or siluer, or images made like vnto the thing which ech person most desired. Those priests vsed to sacrifice both men and cattell, but in the harts and lights of men, after they are taken out of the bodies, they behold and marke certain signes and tokens, and the like of beasts, and vntil they finde the signe which they seke for, they cease not to kil both man and beast, for (say they) vntill we finde the signes that we looke for our gods are not pleased with our sacrifice. Those priestes did seldom go abroad into the town, nor yet lie with any woman in the time of sacrifice, and al the night long they ceased not crying out with loud voyces, inuocating the deuils in the fields wheras this GUACAS were, of which ther was many, for vnto euery Indian house appertained a GUACA. But when they should talke with the deuil they first fast, and sow vp their eye lids, yea, and some breake their eies, because they are exceeding deuout in their wicked, horrible, and blinde religion. Their Cascikes or noble men, doe take nothing in hand without they first consult with the idol priests, or speaking more plainly, with the deuil. The Spaniards found in many of those temples of the Sun, certain great earthen vessels, ful of dried children, which had beene sacrificed. And among those, peeces of siluer and gold, which were

found among those GUACAS, were also found cros staues, and miters, naturally like vnto those which bishops vse, and some images had the like miters on their heads. When father *Thomas de Verlango*, bishop DE TIERRA FIRME, came into Peru, and there hauing his Miter on his head, at deuine seruice, the Indians thought verily that he was a GUACA and demanded if he were the GUACA of the Christians. They did also many times enquire to what purpose, they vsed the miter, but they could yeld no reason for it, sauing that it was an ornament of great antiquitie. Beside this GAUCAS throughout PERU were many houses or monasteries, wherin a great number of wemen were dedicated to the Sun. These wemen after they were once entred into those houses, they neuer came forth againe, but there continued spinning and weauing very good cloth of cotton wool, and sheepes wool. And when their cloth was wrought and finished, they burned the same with the bones of white sheepe, and then tooke the ashes and threw them into the aire toward the Sun. These wemen liued chaste: but if by hap any offended against chastitie, they slew her for her labour: but contrariwise if any chaunced to be with child, then she was put to her purgation by oth, and if she sware that she was gotten with child by the Sun, then she was pardoned of death. At the time of haruest when the Indians gathered in their corne called MARZ, they vsed yerely to make a solemne feast, and in the fairest plzce of the towne they pitch into the ground two masts like sommerpoles, vpon the top of each they placed the image of a Man, and the middle of the poale are

Cloyster  
wemen.

trimmed with flowers: Then come they in foure seuerall companies with their drummes, and by the sound of their drummes they come also making a great noyse, ech company throwing their wands at the images, and after they haue so done, then commeth the priest bringing an idol, which they place at the foote of the poales, before whom they sacrifice either a man or a sheepe, and with the bloud of either of them, they annoynt the Idol. This done they take the hart and lights to search for their accustomed signes and tokens. And then they signifie therby vnto the people what shal happen, vpon which newes, the feaste is either pleasant or sad, and all that day they spend in dauncing and drinking, and in other pastimes which they vse with instruments of musick according to their maner with their weapons in their hands, which are hatchets, and clubs, and such like.

¶ The opinion which these Indians holde concerninge  
the resurrection. Chap. 12.

THE Cascikes of Peru, and al the principall persons in the Land, they do vse to bury in vaultes, sitting in chaires, and haue upon them and about them, all their ritch clothing: they were wont to burie also with them one or two of their wiues, which were best beloued. It hath happened about this point, sometime the wiues to go to law, to approue which was best beloued, and to auoide that discord, the husband doth leaue determined before his death, who was his best



beloued : they also buried alieue with him two or three boyes or Pages of seruice : they layd also into the graue al his vesell of Golde and Siluer. The effecte and meaninge herof was, that they beleueed to rise againe in another worlde, and therefore they would not then be to seeke for such furniture or seruice. So then when the Spanyards came to breake up those sepulchres, for the gold and plate that was in them, the Indians besought them that they would not scatter the bones, because (said they) their bones beeinge togeather, they shall more easely, and with lesse paine rise againe. The obsequies which their kinsfolke make for them is in this sort, from the top of the Graue there goeth a pipe made of Cane, that reacheth down into the mouth of the dead, wherunto the Kinsefolke do often put into the drinke or bevededge called *CHICHA* : they also make vpon their Graues the Image of the ded, made of wood, and other common folke hath the signe of their occupacion made vpon their graues, but the Souldier or man of War, hath a remembrance according to his valiantnes.

¶ Of the Origen of the Kings of *Peru*, called  
*Ingas*. Chap. 13.

**I**N all the Prouinces of *Peru*, were principall persons, called in the Indian tongue, *CURACAS*, which is as much to saye, as *Cascikes*, in the Iland Speeche, because the Spanyardes which came to conquer in *PERU*, had learned these names in the Ilan of *SANTO DOMINIGO*,

CUBA, SAINCT IHON, and in *Tierra-firme*, where they had dwelt, so that at their first comming thither, they vnderstood not the proper names of things in the PERU speech, by meane wherof the Indians themselues at this day use to name those things according to the Spanyards terms of speech, and therfore they leaue from callinge their noble men CURACA, and call them CASCIKES, and the corne or graine which they were wont to call SARA, they called MARZ, and the drinks which they called ASUA, they now called CICHA.

These noble men did maintaine their vassals in peace and quietnes, and in time of war they were their captains: In this sorte they liued without any generall Prince throughout the land, vntil such time as from the partes of COLLAO, came from the great lake called TITICACA, which is in circuite nere 80. Leagues, certaine warlike persons, which were called INGAS, they vsed to haue the here of their heads rounded, and hoales in their eares, wherat did hang round peeces of gold: The eare in their language was called RINGRYM. The cheefest of the newcome people was called *Sapalla Inga*, which is as much to saye, as onely Lorde, although some saye hee was called *Inga Vira Cocha*, which is to saye, the scumme or fatnes of the Sea, for because they knew not the Origine from whence they came. They beleueed that they were bred of the sayde great lake, out of the which runneth a Riuer toward the East, which in some places is halfe a league broad, and this Riuer falleth into another litle lake 40. leagues distant from the great lake, and there consumeth without any other bent, with great admiration of such as would con-

sider how so great a Riuer should consume in so small a lake. But the said lake is of such depth that they can finde no bottome.

Wherefore it is thought, that by the inwarde bowels of the earth, the water entreth into the sea, as doth the Riuer ALPHEO in Greece. This *Ingas* began first to inhabit the city of Cusco, and from thence they conquered and brought into subiection al the land, and their children successiuely inherited the Empire: that is to say, not the eldest son, but rather the second brother is alwaies successiuely heire to his eldest brother, and when brethren wanteth to inherit, than the eldest son inheriteth. The token or Crowne which those Princes vsed, was a Tassel made of Red wooll, which was worne vpon their heds, and came down to their eies, so that when any gouernor was appointed to rule in any part of the realme, than was deliured vnto him, one of the threds of the Kings tassal, so that with one of those simple threds, hee was obeyed and esteemed euen as though the person royal had bin present, the like was neuer seene in any place of the world: Nay, moreouer, I am bold to say, that the obedience of those people vnto their Prince was such, that it hath happened one of those governors hauing but that only thred from his Prince, and beeing sent therewith, hath slayne both men and women, of a whole Prouince, without any great power, writing or commission: But when those poore subiectes saw that thred they submitted themselues euen vnto death.

A maruailous  
obedience.

By succession of those Kinges, *Ingas*, the State came vnto one called *Guarnacaua*, which is to saye, a ritch

young man, and hee it was that had gotten most countreyes to the augmenting on the estate, hee was also a louer of Iustice and executed the same throughout his land, and brought the countrey to pollicy and tillage, which was thought in those daies a thinge vnpossible, that a barbarous people without learning and Letters, should gouerne with such content and order, and his subiectes also to shew them selues so louing and obedient, in such wise, that to shew their louing harts to ward their Prince, they made two notable high waies in PERU, yea, such that it were very vnmeet they should be without remembrance, for none of those thinges which olde writers account to be of the seuen maruailes of the world, was wrought with such difficultie, paines, and cost as those highwaies were made, when the Prince *Guaynacana* went from the Cittie of Cusco with his Armie, to conquer the Cittie of QUITO, which is neare 500. leagues distant, going by way of the mountaines, in which iorney hee was sore troubled, because those waies were so Rockie and perrilous, yea, and a man would haue thought them vnpossible to passe: wherevpon the Indians thought it meete and conuenient to make a highe way for him, by the which he might returne with victory from the conquest: and to accomplish the same, they tooke the worke in hand, and began the same along the mountaine side, both brode and plaine, and with force broke downe the rockes for that purpose, so that al those barrankes or gutters, which came from a high out of the Mountaines, were filled and made euen with the same way, only by force of hand, yea, some time they were forced to carry upwardes the

stuffe for the worke, aboute 20. fadom, so that this high way or cawsey indureth fīue hundred leagues and more. The Reporte is, that when the way was finished, a Cart laden might passe all the way : but since that time, with the warres betweene the Christians and Indians, this high waie is now spoiled, to disturbe such as should passe that way : and who had seene this way, mought wel consider the charges, by the making plaine of only two leagues of mountaine, which are between two cities in spain, *SEGOVIA*, and *GUADARRAMA*, which was as yet neuer perfectly finished, being an ordinary high way, by the which the Kings of Spaine do passe, when they trauaile with their householders into *ANDALUXIA*, or into the Kingdome of *TOLEDO*. These Indians not contented with so famous a peece of worke, when at another time their Prince *Guaynacaua* determined to visit the Prouince of *QUITO*, which he intirely loued, because it was his owne conquest : hee went by the way of the plaines, where his said subiectes made for him another high way, almost as costly as the mountayn way, because the riuers where their green and fresh things do grow, doth occupy in some places neare three miles from the Riuer through the which they wrought a Cawsey fortie foote of earthen walles on each side, which were of three yardes of height. They continued the same high way through the sandy places, with euident markes that the passengers could not mis their way, which also endureth all along the said space of 500. leagues. But now these marks are spoiled also by means of the sayd warres, but the walles of the waies in the valleys are at this day whole and sound whereby the greatness and maiestie of the

work may easily be iudged, so that the prince GUAYNACAUA went out by the one, and returned by the other, hauing al the way as he should pas trimmed with boughes and flowers of maruailous sweetnes.

¶ Of the notable things that *Guaynacaua* caused to be done in *Peru*. Chap. 14.

BESIDES those famous high wayes before declared, GUANACAUA commaunded to buyld at every ten Leagues end, in the montayne wayes, certaine houses made of a great breadth, wherein were sundry repertitions and roomes sufficient to receiue his owne person when he should passe that way with all his familie and armie, and the like in the other high way in the plaines, although not so nighe the one to the other as the buildinge in the mountaines: But according as the riuers lay, so was the building by reason of succour and prouision of water, and in this sort they stooode distant fifteene, yea, and twentie Leagues. These lodgings were called TAMBOS, whereas the Indians in whose iurisdiction they fel, had prouision alwayes in store of all thinges necessarie for his armie and hoast, not only of meate and drinke, but also of all kinde of armour, apparrel, and weapon, which they vsed for the warres, in such sort, that one of those TAMBOS, if nede required, was able to furnish in euery respecte twenty or thirtie thousand fighting men.

This Prince caryed with him for his garde a great

number of men of warre, with pikes, halberds, clubbes, and battle axes, of siluer, copper, and some of gold, and also seuerall sorts of slinges. They made bridges for Riuers, of timber, and those Riuers which were so broad that those kind of bridges would not serue, they vsed for them mightie long cables made of a certain kind of Rushes called *MAQUEY*, which is more stronger then hempe. These cables are made fast on ech side of the Riuer, so that from the one side to the other there were of length 200. paces.

And by skilfull arte, a certaine little vessell like vnto a great basket serueth to pase ouer the wayfaring men, by the stay and helpe of the cable. These kindes of passages the Indians doe maintaine at their costes and charges: I meane those of the iurisdiction where they fall.

The King vsed to goe in his Litter made of plates of golde, which Litter was not drawn with any kinde of beasts, but only caried vpon noble mens shoulders, which alwayes attended at his court to the number of one thousand: who were also his best beloued, and of his counsell. Likewise these noble men when they went abroad, and attended not on the King, were also caried in Litters vpon their vassals shoulders. These *CASIKES* had their Prince in great honor, reuerance and estimation: so that when any *Piere* or great estate had occasion to come to his Princes presence, his dutiee was to come berefooted, and to bring his mantel on his shoulder, with some present wrapped therein to present to his Souveraigne, in token of duetie and obedience: So that if occasion serued to talk with the Prince twenty

*Princelie  
estate.*

times in one day, so often were they bound to bring him some new gift. Likewise, it was holden for a great offence to looke their Prince in face, and if it hapened any of them to stumble when they carryed the Prince in his Litter, his head was stricken of for his labour.

In euery half league was appointed for the Princes seruice a foote Poast, which ordinarily did runne with greater speede then the horse poast. When this Prince had conquered any Prouince, forthwith he commaunded the chieftest men of that place to be sent into some other Prouince of his Kingdome already in subiection: And the Inhabitants there to come and abide in the Prouince newly discovered, for the greater securitie of his estate.

Mitimaes.

And these people that were in this sort changed from one Prouince to another were called MITIMAES.

Out of every Prouince throughout his whole Dominion they brought yerely vnto their prince certain tribute of such things as the countrey yealdeth, in so much that in some barrain soiles where no good commodittie grew, yet from thence they sent yerely also to the King in token of duetie and obedience certain loades, called burthens of litle Lizarts, as far as 300. leagues from Cusco.

Chimocapa.

This Prince GUAYNACAUA did reedifie the Temple of the sun which was of all time founded in the Citie of Cusco, and seeled the Roofes and walles thereof with boordes of siluer and golde. And because a certaine noble man which dwelled in the playnes had rebelled against him, called CHIMOCAPPA, who was a man of great possession, and had more then one hundred leagues of ground, he went personally against him, and slew



him in the field, and commaunded that from thenceforth no Indian of the plaines should at any time were weapon, which order is kept vntill this day : yet notwithstanding his successor enioyed through the Princes fauour, the prouince of *Chimo*, where at this present standeth the citie of TRUGILLIO.

GUAYNACAUA and his father toke an order for the breeding of cattaile, by meane whereof the countrey was wel prouided, out of the which they payd tithing which they sacrificed to the sun. The Chiefe cause of the estimation of gold among the Indians, was because the King made al the vessell for the fernice of his court of that mettall, and also Iewels for his person, and offerings for the Temple. The King had alwaies a chaire of gold caried with him to sit in, of 16. carrets in fines, which was esteemed at 25000 dukets, and this chaire was one of the things that *Don Franciso Pizarro* chose for his iewel at the time of the conquest : For according to the articles of agreement betweene his Maiestie and him, was agreed that of the best Iewels which should be found or taken at any victorie, hee should haue one out of the first choise of the whole treasure. At the birth of the first manchild which GUAYNACAUA had, he commanded a cable of gold wier to be made in remembrance of the birth of his sonne, that was of such greatnes, as many Indians do affirme which are as yet liuing, that 200. strong men could scarcely lift or beare, and also in remembrance of this memorable iewel he named his sonne *Guasca*, which in the Indian speech is called a cable or great rope, and added thereunto for his sirname *Inga*, which is as much to say, as Emperour.

This Example, I thought good to declare in this place for to conuince an opinion which is held in Spayne, among such as know not the fashions of India, and was how that people esteemed no golde nor yet knew the valew therof although it is true that they had many strange vessels wrought of siluer and golde, and also images of men, wemen, sheepe, and many other kinde of beasts and sundry kindes of herbes, wrought in the same metall of exceeding cunning workmanship.

¶ Of the estate of the warres when the Spaniards came into *Peru*. Chap. 15.

**A**L though the principal intent of this Historie, was to set out the things hapned to the Spaniards which at that time conquered the land, and of their discouery since. But sithens this could not wel be done without touching somewhat of the estate of the Indians which then ruled : And also that it may be understood it was the deuine permission that the Spaniards should come thither at such time as the land was deuided into two parcialities, for otherwise, it would haue seemed not only difficult, but also almost impossible. Therefore I will recite in briebe the estate which the Spaniards found the countrey in at their arriual.

After that GUAYNACAUA had brought into subiection so great a number of Prouinces to his Empire, for the space of 500. Leagues, accounting from Cusco westward, hee then determined to goe (in person) to con-

quere the Prouince of QUITO, in the vttermost part whereof finished his dominion. So that he prouided on his iourney thitherward with a great armye, and beeing come thither, and hauing finished and quyeted that Prouince, he delighted much in that countrey, because it was a pleasant Soyle and holesome for his complexion, whereupon hee abode there a great space, leuing in the Citie of Cusco certain of his Sonnes and Daughters, amonge whom was his eldest Sonne, called *Guascar Inga*, *Mango Inga*, and *Paulo Inga* and diuerse others. And in QUITO hee married another Wife, Daughter vnto the Lorde of that Countrey, and of her hee begot a Sonne, called *Atabaliba*, who he loued exceedinglye: so that now hee determined to returne to Cusco, lavinge his Sonne with a Tutor in QUITO, but in this returne, hee found the Calsey in the Mountayne broken and spoyled, as herebefore hath beene declared.

After hee had abode in Cusco certaine yeares, hee determined to returne againe to QUITO, not onely because that Countrey contented him much, but also with desire to see his Wife, and young Sonne, whom he loued more than any other of his Children: and this Iorney hee tooke in hande, by the highe waye that was made in the Playnes, and from this time forward, hee retourned no more to Cusco, but abode all his life time in QUITO, and gaue that Land or Prouince which he had with force conquered, to his Sonne *Atabaliba*, because the same had been of his Grandfathers.

Whan *Guaynacaua* died, his Sonne *Atabaliba* tooke pcession of his Armye, and of all his fathers ritches, which were in that Prouince, although his greatest

treasure was lefte in his Treasury in the Cittie of *Cusco*, in the custody of his eldest Sonne, vnto whom, *Atabaliba* sent Embassadors, giuinge him to vnderstand, the decease of his Father, and also submittinge himselfe to his obedience, beseechinge his Maiesty that he would ratifie the gift of his Prouince of *Qurro*, which the father of them both had left vnto him, considering that, that Prouince of *Qurro* was conquered by their father, after the maryage with his Mother: and moreouer, the Lande came by his Mother, and Auncestors, and was not pertayning to the Crowne of *Cusco*, or his inheritance.

*Guascar* made answers, that hee should come to *Cusco* and render vp vnto him the Army, and in so doinge, hee would giue vnto, such Landes as should maintaine him like a man: but the state of *Qurro* hee should not haue, because it was the uttermost part of his Kingdome, and from thence hee ment to conquer forward, and alwaies there to maintayne a Garrison as a Frontier: And if vpon this warninge hee refused to come vnto him that then hee would bend his power against him, as an open enemy.

*Atabaliba* tooke counsell vpon this matter, with two of his Fathers Captaynes, who were both wise and valyant in the Warres. The one was called *Quizquiz*, and the other *Cilicuchima*, who counsailed that hee should not abide his Brothers comminge, but that it might please him to begin to take that enterprise in hand, to meet him and to offer him the Battaile, if he would not graunt to his request: and in so dooing, he might easely possesse all the Prouinces through the which hee would

passee: and in this sorte his Army should daily increase, yea, and also by this meanes should force his Brother to graunt vnto his desire: this councell liked him well, wherevpon hee personally with his whole Hoast departed from QUITO, and dayly incroched the Countrey into his hands: *Guascar* hearinge of this newes, sente to encounter with him one of his cheefest Captaynes, with a company of light foote men, the which with great speede came to a Prouince called TUMIBAMBA, one hundred Leagues distante from QUITO, and there hauing notice how *Atabaliba* proceeded forward with all his power, they despatched a post to Cusco to *Guascar* aduertising him of the proceedinge of *Atabaliba*, and besought him to send forthwith vnto them 2000. of the expertest men of Warre, for with them and vnder their gouernment, they had ready 30000 men of that onely Prouince, which people were called *Canares*, vnto which their request, *Guascar* prouided accordingly: and when these 2000. men were come, there ioyned with them the *Casikes* or TUMIBAMBA, and the *Chaparas*, *Paltas*, and *Canares*, these affaires beeing knowne to *Atabaliba*, he came with his power, and gaue them battaile, in the Battaile. which many were slaine on both sides, and the power of *Atabaliba* ouerthrowen, and hee himselfe taken prisoner vpon the Bridge of Riuer of Tumibamba, and whilest the Souldiers of *Guascar* were occupied in pastimes, and drunkennesse, triumphing of the Victory: a certaine woman gaue in at a Window to *Atabaliba* where hee was Prisoner, a Bar of Copper, wherwith hee brake downe a Wal, and so fled vnto QUITO which was about 23. leagues from thence, and there began to geather another

Seconde  
Battaile.

Hoaste of men, makinge them beleue that his Father had conuerted him into a Snake, when hee was Prisoner, and by that meanes hee was delyured out of Prison, creeping out at a hole, and that his Father also promised him victorie, if hee retourned agayne vpon his enemies: whereupon his people willingly wente with him, and incountered agayne with his enemies, and gaue them the ouerthrowe, but many were slayne on both sides: so that vntill this day remaineth heapes of boanes of those that at that time were slayne.

*Atabaliba* beeinge encouraged with his great victorie, determined to goe against his Brother: and when hee came to CANARES he slew neare 60000. persons, because they were agaynst him in the first Battayle, so that hee consumed them all with Fier and Sworde, and beate downe playne with the grounde all their Habitacions, and Towne of TUMIBAMBA, which was planted in a fayre Playne, neare vnto three fayre Riuers.

From this place hee went conqueringe all the way as hee wente, and of such as wente about to resist him, hee left not one aliue: But such as came vnto him offeringe their seruice, hee did louingly receaue, and in this manner his Hoast dailye increased: and when hee came to TUMBEZ hee minded to conquer by Sea the Ile of PUNA, but the Casike of that Iland, came and defended his purpose with a great number of Raffes: *Atabaliba* consideringe that the conquest of that place would require more time, and also hauing in remembrance how his Brother *Guascar* was comming towards him with all his power, hee therfore proceeded on his iorney towards Cusco, and when hee was come to *Caxamalca*, there hee

stayed, and sent two of his Captaynes with 4000. men to discouer the way: and when they had discryed the Campe of *Guascar* they returned secretly by another way, in the which by chaunce they mette with 700. of the cheefest men of *Guascars* Campe, among whom was *Guascar* him selfe, so that the Company of *Atabaliba* set upon them and slew the most of them, and tooke *Guascar* Prisoner, whereupon all *Guascars* Hoast inuironed them about, with determinacion to haue slayne them all. The Captaynes on the behalfe of *Atabaliba*, *Guascar* taken Prisoner. commaunded *Guascar* to Warne his Captaynes to staye their proceeding, for otherwise, they would cut of his hedde: for sayde they, our Princes comminge is not to indamage you, but that you would consent that hee may quietly injoy his estate of *QUITO*, reseruing his obedience, and vassallage towards you. When *Guascar* had heard and vnderstood his Brithers desire, and also with feare of his life, hee commaunded his men of Warre to proceede no further, but incontinent to retire backe againe to *Cusco*, which was forthwith accordingly performed.

When *Atabaliba* vnderstood his great good fortune, hee commaunded his Captaynes to bring his Brother Prisoner unto him, to *Caxamalca*, where hee abode his comming. At this instant came Don Francesco Pizarro, with all his Company of Spanyardes, which hee brought with him into *PERU*, so that he had now oportunitie to begin his conquest, as at large in this second Booke shalbe declared, for the Hoaste of *Guascar*, for the most parte were fledde, and also the Army of *Atabaliba*, for the most part were discharged.

## THE SECOND BOOKE

*of the Conquest which was achieved in  
the Prouince of Peru by Don Francisco  
Pisarro, and his Company. Chap. 1.*

IN the former Boke is declared, how *Don Francisco Pisarro* abode in PANAMA, after his returne from Spayne, preparinge things necessary, for the proceedinges of the Conquest of PERU, yea, and also *Don Diego de Almagro*, did furnish that voyage with as great a good will and charge, as at the first hee had begon, for in him onely did consist the principall credit and stocke: but some cause of slacknes was, because *Don Francisco Pisarro* had not remembred his good will and deedes, when hee was in Spayne, nor yet brought any kinde of countenance of fauour for him, from the Emperours Maiestie: but yet with sufficiente excuses they ioyned agayne into freendship, although hee neuer after bare any cordiall good will to his Brethren expecially to *Fernando Pisarro* who hee tooke to be his Capital enemy.

*Don Francisco* fraughted the Ship of *Hernando Ponce de Leon*, in the which hee shipped himselfe and his foure Brethren, and also the most of his companye, of Horsemen and Footemen, with great difficultie, because many of them stode in doubt of the Conquest, by meanes of the vnfortunate successe and repulses happened the yeares before: hee hoyled vp Sayles in the beginninge of the yeare .1531. and the winde beeing contrary, he



was forced to alande his men a hundred Leagues on this side the place that hee pretended.

And trauailing alonge the Coast, they were in great extremity of victualles, by meane that they could not passe the Riuers, but only by swimminge, as well men as Horses: in which troubles, the valiant minde and courage of *Don Francisco* did greatly animate them, yea, and the great perrill of his own person, who letted not to passe ouer vpon his owne shoulders, suche as could not swimme, vntil at length they came to a Towne of Indians by the Sea side called COAQUE which was ritche Coaque. of Marchandize, and plentifull of victuals, where hee comforted his men which were weake, and brought low, with their troublesome Iorney.

From this Towne, hee sent two Shippes to PANAMA, and NICARAGUA, and in them the somme of 30000. Castlins of Golde, which hee had taken up in COAQUE, to the intent that they mought see in those Citties the likelyhoode of gayne, that might ensue of their trauailes, and to encourage them to follow his steps.

In this Towne of COAQUE, they found some Emeralds which were exceeding good, and fine: This Towne standeth vnder the Equinoctiall Lyne: there were some through couetousnes, lost much money, because they vnderstoode not the fineness nor goodnes of those stones, for they made their experience, taking Hammers to prooue the hardness of the stones, and so they spoyled many faire and rich Iewels. After they had abode here a while his men were vexed with that sort of small Poxe, of which heretofore hath beene spoken, so that fewe or none of all his Army escaped: Notwithstandinge, the

Gouernour perswaded them, that euill constillation, of that Clymat, was the cause, whereupon they proceeded forward, vntill they came to the Prouince called PUERTO VIEJO conquering and pacifying the People, all the way as they went. At this place met with them, Captaine *Benealcasar*, and *Ihon Fores* who were come from NICARAGUA with their ship, in which they brought certaine Footmen, and Horsemen.

¶ Of the thinges which happened to the Gouernour, in the Iland of *Puna*, and the Conquest of the same. Chap. 2.

THE Prouince of PUERTO VIEJO beeing pacified, the Gouernour with his company toke the way toward TUMBEZ, and there hee determined to passe vpon Raffles, which were provided into the Ilande of PUNA, which standeth in the front of PUERTO VIEJO, so that he passed ouer his Horsemen and Footemen with great daunger, because the Indian had deuised to cut the Ropes, wherewith the Raffles were bound, and in that sorte to drowne and spoile his men. This pollicy beeing vnderstood by the Gouernour, hee gave warning to all his company, that each should haue his sword neare drawen, and to haue a vigilant eye to euery Indian. When they were arriued at the Iland, the Indians came and offered them peace, and also curteously entertained them: Notwithstanding they had prepared a Snare or Ambush to haue slayne them all that night: howbeit the Gouernour had

notice thereof, wherupon hee forthwith set vpon them, and tooke their Cascike Prisoner: Yet neuerthelesse, the next day, the Gouvernour and all his men were inuironed with Indians, men of Warre. Than the Gouvernour and his Brethren with great courage, toke their horses, and placed their men in good order, and sent other some, for the sauegard of the ships which rode neare the shoare.

The Spanyards fought so manfully, that in short time the Indian enemies were put to flight and many of the wounded and slaine, at which assault (only) 3. Spaniards were slaine, but diuerse sore hurte, especially *Gonsalo Pizarro*, who was daingerously wounded on his knee. Then arriued Captaine *Hernando de Soto* with moe men, aswell footmen as horsemen, which also came from NICARAGUA, so that now the Indians beinge fled to their Raffes, they wandered among the Parishes in such sorte, that they were safe from the Christians.

Then determined the Gouvernour to passe unto TUMBES, after he had deuided among his soldiars the spoyle of gold and othe thinges which they had there obtained, and also because that Iland was very apt to diseases, lying nere vnto the Equinoctiall.

¶ How the Gouvernour came to *Tumbez*, and of the conquest which he made vntil he had inhabited the citie of Saint Mighell. Chap. 3.

IN this Iland of PUNA were captiues aboue 600. men and wemen of TUMBEZ, and one principall person of TUMBEZ also, who was like wise captiue: the Gouvernour gaue them all their liberty, and sent them home into their Countrey, and when hee him selfe had taken shippinge to passe vnto TUMBEZ, hee sent three of his men with some of those Indians, whom he had set at liberty, thinking that the Townes men of TUMBEZ would haue beene thankfull, for the good tourne receiued: so that his three men passed with certayne of those Indians vpon a Raffe, and arriued sooner than the Gouvernour. But as soone as they were arriued, the Indians sacrificed those three Spanyards to their Idols, in recompence of the great liberalitie which the Gouvernour had extended to them, in deliuering them out of their captiuitie: the like also had hapned to Captayne *Hernando de Soto*, who also had passed vpon a Raffe, with one of his men which attended on him, if by good hap *Diego de Aguero*, and *Rodrigo Losana* had not at that instant arriued, and entered the Riuer of TUMBEZ, who aduised him of the daunger that he was falling into. Now also the Countrey beinge reuolted, the Gouvernour wanted Raffles to vnship his Men, and Munition, whereupon that night there came none a Land but the Gouvernour *Hernando*, and *Ihon Pizarro* his Bretherne, Father *Vincent* of VALUERDE Captayne *Soto*, and other two Spanyardes, they alighted not from their Horses all that night,

although they were throughly wet with the Seagate when they came ashore upon a Raffe from the Ship, which Raffe also was ouerthrowen at their comming ashore, for want of knowledge, *Hernando Pizarro* abode at the Water side to see both Men, Horses, and furniture unshipped, but the Gouvernour proceeded forward for the space of two Leagues, and coulde not attaine to the speeche of any Indian, for they were fled vnto the Mountaines with their Armor, whereupon hee returned backe againe to the Sea side, where hee met with Captayne *Mena* and Captaine *Ihon de Salzedo* which were come to seeke him, with certayne Horsemen, which were newly vnshipped, and had gathered togeather many of the Gouvernours company which had strayed abroad.

And then the Gouvernour pitched his Campe in *TUMBEZ*: in the meane while came Captaine *Benalcasar*, who had remained to see the residew of the men shipped from the Iland, who duringe the time of his abode there, had many skirmishes with the Indians.

The Gouvernour abode in *TUMBEZ* twentie dayes, sending daily Embassadors to the Lorde of that Soyle, requiring him to yeeld to the Emperors seruice, but all was in vaine, for he would neuer accept that freendship, rather he did much hurt, and spoiled many of his men of seruice, called Laborers, when they went abroad to seke victuals for the Campe: and the Spanyardes could not annoy them in any respecte, because they were on the other side of the Riuer, vntill at length the Gouvernour made Raffles, in such secret sorte, that the Indian enemies had no vnderstanding thereof: so that in an

Euening, he with his Brethren *Ihon*, and *Gonsalo Pizarro*, with Captaine *Soto*, and *Benalcasar*, passed on those Raffles 50. Horses ouer the Riuer and trauailed all that night by a troublesome narrew way, among Thornes, Briers, and Rockes, so that when it drew nere day, he came and set vpon the enemies campe, and made a marueylous spoile among them which endured with fire and sword the space of 15. dayes, in reuenge of the three Spaniards which the Indians had so trayterously sacrificed, in recompence of the libertie which the Gouvernour gaue them in the Iland of PUNA.

The Cascike of TUMBEZ seeing the great hurt done vnto them, yealded himself, and in token of submission, he presented to the Gouvernour certaine gold and siluer. Then he proceeded on his discouery with the most part of his company, leauing the residue with his Maiesties Auditour, *Antonio Nauarro*, and the Treasurer *Alonso Requelme* and iorneyed til he came to the Riuer of POECHOS, which stooode 30. Leagues distant from TUMBEZ, and obtayned peace with all the Cascikes and Townes which were on the borders of that Riuer: He also discovered the port of Payta, which was accounted the best harbor in al the coast.

To this place came messengers to the gouernour from Cusco from the Prince *Atabaliba* who as yet was not apprehended as before hath bene declared, crauing at his hands succour and defence against his sayd brother. With these ioyful newes the Gouvernour sent his brother *Hernando Pizarro* back againe to TUMBEZ to bring away to him all the remainder of his company, which had abode behinde, and when he had so done, he

inhabited with them in the Citie of S. MIGHEL, which sometime was a town of Indians called TANGARARA scituated on the Riuer side of CHIRA not far from the sea, where was an exceeding good harbor for the shippes which came from PANAMA, and hauing here deuided their gold and plate which was presented in this Coast vnto them. The Gouvernour prouided forward leauinge certaine of his men for Citizens of the new city, and tooke his way towarde the Prouince of CAXAMALCA, because hee had intelligence how *Atabaliba* was there.

¶ How the Gouvernour came to *Caxamalca* and what there happened. Chap. 4.

IN this iorney to Caxamalca, the Gouvernor and his armie passed great extremitie of thirst in a desert without habitation of .20. leagues long, where was neither tree, bush nor water, but only al sandy ground and very hot. At the end of 20. Leagues he came into the Prouince of MORTUE, where he found fresh and pleasant Valleys, replenished with many Villages, where hee well refreshed his army with great aboundance of victuals which he there found, and as he went from thence, ascending into the mountaines he met with a messenger which came from *Atabaliba*, who brought vnto him a present, a paire of paynted Shooes, and a payre of hand ruffes of golde, beseeching him when he should come before his Prince *Atabaliba* to weare those shoes on his feete, and also to weare the ruffes accord-

ingly, to thentent that he might be knowen by these tokens.

The Gouvernour receiued thankfully the present, and promised that he would fulfill his request and moreouer that he should certifie *Atabaliba*, that his comming was not to offend him, if notorious wrong were not offered vnto him: Because, sayd he, the Emperour king of CASTILE, who sent me hither, commanded that I should not attempt to displease any, without reason. With this answere the messenger departed, and the Gouvernour likewise followed with great foresight, that no enemy should disturbe his passage.

When he came to CAXAMALCA he met with another Messenger, which came to aduertise him that he should not take up his lodging without expresse commaundement from *Atabaliba*. To this ambassage, the Gouvernour made no answere, but rather toke up his lodging according as he thought good.

And then he sent capitaine *Soto* with twentie horsmen wel trimmed to ATABALIBA, his Campe which stode one League distant from the Gouvernours lodging, to signifie vnto him the arryuall of his Generall. When Capitaine *Soto* came in sight of ATABALIBA, he set spurres to his horse as though he would haue run against an armed man, which brauery did not a little amase the poore Indians, who with all hath fled out of his way. But for their labour, ATABALIBA commanded them to be slayne, and would geue *Soto* no answere to his embassage, vntill *Fernando Pizarro* came, who the Gouvernour sente after *Soto* with another company of horsemen, but he tolde his minde to one of his noble Cascikes, and the Cascike



declared his saying to the interpreter, and the Interpreter to *Soto*. But to *Hernando Pizarro* hee spake personally by the mouth of the only Interpreter: Vnto whom *Pizarro* sayd, that his brother the Gouvernour came from the Emperour his Maiestie, and to know his royall will, he only desired that it might please him to signifie whether hee might freely come vnto his presence, and to be accepted as his freend. Vnto whom Atabaliba answered that hee would freendly accept his offer, so that hee would returne the golde and plate which since the entrance into his land, he had taken from his Indian subiects, and also that forthwith he would depart his countrey and dominions, and to take order with him in these causes, he ment the next day to meete him at a certaine place called TAMBO DE CAXAMALCA.

When *Hernando Pizarro* had receaued his answere he beheld the great number of tents which were in the Campe of ATABALIBA, which seemed vnto him a great Citie, and then tooke his leaue and retirned with his answere to the Gouvernour, and when he was come to his brother, hauing declared what he had heard and seene, it some what discouraged him, hauing for euery Christian 200. Indians. But not withstanding, he and all his company beeing hautie minded, and also of great stomacke. The night followinge they confortd one another, putting their only confidence in God, so that than they occupied them selues in trimminge their Armor and other furniture, without takinge any rest of sleepe the whole night.

¶ How the Battayle was giuen to *Atabaliba*, and the taking of him Prisoner. Chap. 5.

THE next day following, the Gouvernor early in the morninge set his Armye in good order, deuydinge 60. Horsemen into three partes, and placed them in Ambush in seuerall places, vnder the gouernment of Captaine *Soto*, and Captaine *Benalcasar*: and for their Chieftaines hee appointed his three Brethren, *Hernando*, *Ihon*, and *Gonsalo Pizarro*, and he himselfe went with the infantry, which is to be vnderstode al sortes of armed footemen, prohibiting that none should stir without his watchword, and the great ordinance shot of: *Atabaliba* likewise set in good order his men of war, appointing conuenient ground for his captaines to geue the onset. He also commaunded that where he iudged the most danger of the christian force, that one of his chiefe captaines called *Ruminagui* should attend, that if nede required, he might set on the Spanyardes at their flight.

In this order *Atabaliba* set forward with great consideration and leisure, that he was at the least 4. houres going one little league. Hee himself was caryed in his litter vpon noble mens shoulders. There went before him 300. gentlemen attired in one sort of liuery, making cleere his way of all such stones and dust, euen to the very strawes that might disturbe him.

Then followed the rest of the nobilitie carryed vpon their vassales shoulders in a certaine kinde of Litters, esteeming in nothing the christians force, but rather iudged to take them napping, without any kind of re-

sistance because a certaine Indian Ruler sent word to *Atabaliba*, that these newcome men were but few in number, yea, such as could not trauaile on foote, but of necessitie were forced to ryde on greate strange sheepe. Requesting therefore that he might haue the vauntgard.

But when he came to the place called TAMBO of CAXAMALCA, and saw but the company of footemen, because the Horsemen lay in ambush, hee deemed that those ryders on the great Sheepe, durst not appeare. Whereupon he went into his Litter, saying these men haue already yealded, and the others confirmed his sayinge.

Then came the Bishoppe, father *Vincent de Valuerde* with a Breuiary in his handes, saying : That one God in Trinitie had created Heauen, Earth, and all Creatures. Hee also made Adam, the first man on the earth, and also made EVE, his wife of a ribbe taken out of his body : Of which two persons all mankinde were engendred, and that through the disobedience of these two persons, our forefathers, we al fel into sinne, so that we could not obtain grace to enter into heauen, to enjoy the Sight of God, vntil Christ our redeemer came and was born of a pure virgine to saue vs, and for that intent and effecte he suffered most bitter death and passion.

After the which, the thirde day hee rose agayne glorified, and for certayne dayes hee abode in the worlde, and then ascended into heauen, leauing for teachers of his holy Lawes, his sacred apostles.

Furthermore (sayde hee) this our Countrey God hath lefte in charge to the Emperoure of Christians called the Lorde CHARLES our Soueraigne : who hath sent in

his steade the Gouvernour *Don Francisco Pizarro*, who is here present to warne and notefye vnto you on Gods behalfe, all my former wordes. And also if you will beleue, and bee baptized, rendering obedience to his Maiestie, as a great parte of Christendome doeth, he will defende you, and also maintayne your Countrey in peace and iustice, and reserue vnto you your Liberties as hee hath vsed to do to other Kings and princes.

But of this gentle offer hee refused, the Gouvernour here present, will committe you to cruell warre, with fyer and sworde, and the Launce in hand.

And as touching the Faith of Iesu Christ, and his holy Gospell, after that yee shall be well instructed therein, and wyll assuredly beleue the same, you shall then doe the thinges conuenyant for the saluation of your soules. But if not, you shall not be forced thereunto.

When *Atabaliba* had heard the Bishoppes relation, hee answered, how that Countrey and all therein contayned, his Father and Auncestors had gotten, and lefte the same to his Brother *Guascar Inga*, and because at that instant hee had ouercommen him in battayle, and had him Prysoner, the Lande appartayned vnto him, and that by meanes thereof hee possessed the same, and therefore hee vnderstoode not how the Emperour, or by what title could require his Countrey: But (quoth he) I will defend his pretence.

And as concerning Iesu Christ, and his mightie workes, he said, that he knew nothing therof, nor yet beleued that there was anye other Creator but only the Sunne, who hee helde for his chiefe God, and the earth

for their Mother: And that the Gods called *Guacas*, and *Pachacama*, had created all other earthly thinges. And as touching the Emperour, he knew not what he was, because he neuer saw him.

He also demaunded how the bishop did know that all those thinges were true which hee had rehearsed vnto him. The bishop answered, that in the booke which hee helde in his hand, there in those things were written, and that the same booke was holy scripture come from God.

*Atabaliba* desired that he would let him see that booke, which forth with was deliuered vnto him, and hauing it in his hands, he turned from leafe to leafe. Why (quoth he) this booke speaketh not one word to me, and there with threw it on the ground: Wherewith the bishop taking up his booke againe, cryed, vpon them, vpon them. But the Gouvernour expecting that the Indians should haue begun, meaning thereby to haue the greater aduantage, but now thinking it not conuenient to make any longer delay, he sent word to his brother *Hirnando Pizarro*, that he should geue the onset, and also forthwith commaunded the Ordinance to be shot of, and then the horsemen began to encounter with the force of the enemie in three partes, and the Gouvernour with the footemen tooke the way to the personall force of *Atabaliba*, and brake the array of his front, euen vntil he came to his Litter, where hee slew the Cascikes which carryed the Litter, who were no sooner slayne, when others tooke the place.

But the Gouvernour seeing the victory, as he thought long, and although many Indians were slayne, yet the

death of one of his men did import much, whereupon hee himselfe with noble courage came to the Litter of *Atabaliba* and tooke him by the heare of his head, which he vsed to weare long, according to the vse of his countrey, and with force drew him out of the Litter. In the meane season, his company were so vehemente, that they so lashed with their Weapons on the Litter which was of Golde that by mishap, they hurt the Gouvernours hand, and although a great troupe of Indians came to rescue their Prince, yet it preuayled not, but in fime, was taken Prisoner by the Gouvernour. But when his Warriars saw their Chieftaine taken, and they assaulted on euery side, and especially, with the fury of the Horsemen, to whose force they had not beene accustomed: they began to retire and flye with all speede possible, leauinge their Armour behinde them: yea, the haste in the retire was such, that one disturbed another: in the flight Horsemen made great spoyle among them, and followed their Victory, till the Night caused them to cease. But when the Indian Captaine of greatest trust, called *Ruminagui*, heard the thunderinge noyse of the Ordenance, and also saw his priuy Watche, which stode on a high Rocke, throwen downe by a Christian: then fearing the daunger, hee with all his charge also, tooke them to the swiftnes of their feete, and neuer rested until he came to the Prouince of *Quito*, which was distant from the place where the Battayle was, aboue 250. Leagues, as hereafter shal be declared.

¶ How *Atabaliba* commaunded his Brother *Guascar* to be slayne, and how *Hernando Pizarro* proceeded in the Discouery. Chap. 6.

WHEN *Atabaliba* was taken Prisoner, the next day following, the Treasure and spoile was ioyned together, and assuredly it was a rare, yea and maruailous thinge, to see the number of Vessels, both of Siluer and Golde, which was found in the Indian Campe: and also the gallaunt Tentes, made after their fashion, and many straunge garments: The vessels of Golde, was esteemed in 60000. Poyzes, which is accounted seuen shillings starling to euery poyze, and this vessel was for the seruice of the only person of *Atabaliba*. And also 5000. women which submitted themselues willinglye to the Spanyardes commaundement.

And when these things were ended *Atabaliba* sayd vnto the Gouvernour, sithence you haue mee now Prisoner in your power, vse me fauourably, and for my raunsome and libertye, I will giue this Quaderne place, or house full with vessels and peices of Golde, and so much Plate as you will reasonably demaund. And when his offer was in this sorte declared, hee thought that the Gouvernour tooke his sayings to be a thing vnpossible, wherefore hee replyed againe, sayinge: I will performe what I haue saide, and somewhat more.

The Gouvernor answered, that he would deale freendly with him, accordinge to his request: *Atabaliba* gaue him most hartie thanks, and forthwith dispatched messengers throughout his Dominions, and especially, to Cusco, to gather together the golde and Plate, which

hee had promised for his raunsome, which was iudged a thing vncredible to bee performed, for the couenaunt was, to giue full of the said Treasure, a certaine house in CAXAMALCA, as high as the same *Atabaliba* could reach with his hand, standing on the ground, and the like in compasse, accordinge to the height, and to make his promise the playner, hee marked out with a red Lyne, the plot which hee would fill with the sayde vessels of Golde and Plate: but notwithstandinge, that dailye, came great store of Treasure into the Campe, yet the Spanyardes thought it not sufficient for a foundation of the performance of *Atabaliba*, his promise, whereupon they began amonge themselues to murmure, saying: the time passeth away and *Atabaliba* complyeth not with vs his raunsome, consideringe that his day is past: But saide they, it is to bee thought that with this policy, he meaneth to geather a new Army, and so to come sodainly vpon vs to our distruction. *Atabaliba* beeing a sencible and wise man, vnderstood the murmuring of the Christians, he demaunded of the Gouvernor the cause of their muttering and secret conference? who informed him of the matter, euen as it was: why answered hee, as yet they haue no reason to complaine of the delay, for the day of paimint is scarcely paste, and that they ought to haue consideracion that the place which was the Cittie of Cusco, from whence the greatest part of his raunsome should come, stood distant from CAXAMALCA 200. long leagues of euil way, and moreouer the treasure should be brought vpon mens shoulders: by reason wherof he praied them not to thinke the time long, nor yet to thinke it impossible, that he was able to performe



his promise, the promises considered, it was not much to haue patience for one Moneth, more or lesse: but yet said hee for your more quicker dispatch, let one or two of your company goe vnto Cusco, to see the thing which I haue offered. Vpon this point there were sundry opinions aming the Christians, whither they mought giue credit to *Atabaliba* his words, and also, how it was not a thing conuenient to put any Christian in the Indian power: when *Atabaliba* had vnderstood their meaning, he laughed, saying: I maruaile that any Christian should stand in distrust of my word and security in the iorney to Cusco. Do ye not consider how ye haue my person prisoner in Chaines, and also my wiues and Children in your power: with this answere, they determined that Captaine *Soto* and *Pedro del Barro* should go to Cusco, who by the commaundement of *Atabaliba* were carried in Litters vpon the Indians shoulders, and had for their Gard a great company of Atabalibas Souldiers: and in this order they iorneyed by poste, for those Littermen presume to make great speede, and abhor slow jorneyes, yet only two men do carry the Litter at one time, notwithstanding 50. or 60. persons attend vpon euery Litter, and so they go runninge with their burden for a space, and then are ready other two for to take the burden. In thet way as they wente, they met *Atabaliba* his Captaines, who brought his Brother Prince *Guascar* prisoner, who was desirous to tale with the said Captaine *Soto*, and his Companion, of whom he was informed, of such thinges which had hapned, and also what their pretence and comming into the country was. But when GUASCAR

vnderstood the Emperours meaning, and also the intent of the christians gouernour, in his name, which was aswel to maintayne in iustice the Christians as the Indians which he should conquere, and that euery one might enjoy his owne, he then discouered the discord betweene him and his brother, and how his brothers intent was to disherite him of his kingdome and estate, which of right was his owne inheritance by discent from his father *Guaynacaua*, and for this purpose he was now carryed prisoner to be slaine.

Wherefore hee most humbly besought them to returne backe againe with him, to open his doliens to the Lord Marques their Gouvernour, beseeching him, that sithens they both brethren were at that instant in his power, and he of right beeing absolute Lord of the land, that it might please him to see iustice executed betweene them, and to geue iudgement to which of them the Kingdome did appartine, considering that as he was enfourmed his only comming was for that intent. And if, sayd hee, the Marques wil take this matter in hand, I will not only see perfourmed the summe of golde and plate, promised by *Atabaliba* to be deliuered at TAMBO in CAXAMALCA: But I wil also fill at that house called TAMBO, euen to the rooffe, which should be three times as much and more that hys brother had promised, requesting them to make enquiry whether he were a man of power to perfourm his offer, with greater facilitie then his brother was able to perfourme his promise. For *Atabaliba* to accomlishe his raunsome, should be forced to spoyle the rich Temple of the Sunne, in the Citie of Cusco which was wainscoted with boord of gold and plate in

equall panes, because hee had no other remedy, nor from whence to haue any other quantitie.

But I (quoth he) haue in my power all the treasure and iewels of my father, where with I may easlye perfourme much more than I haue spoaken. Wherein hee sayd the trueth, although his said treasure was hidden under ground, in such places no man liuing knew where it was but only he himselfe, and as yet vntil this day, it is not known: for the multitude of Indians which carryed the same to the secret place where it was buried, as soone as the sayd treasure was hidden, they were by his commaundement all slayne, because the place should not be discouered: Although since the winning of the Countrey, the Spanyardes haue sought and digged in many places where they suspected the treasure to be hidden. But vntill this day they could not attayne to the knowledge thereof. Captaine *Soto* and *Petro del Barrio* made answere to *Guascar*, that they could not leaue of from the iorney which they had in hand, but with al speede possible they meant to returne, and then would sollicite his suite and request, and so departed and proceeded on their iorney, which was the only cause of *Guascars* death, and also the losse of al the said wonder-  
Ouersight.
ful treasure: for the captaines which carryed him prisoner, gaue intelligence by poast to *Atabaliba*, of all the talke had betweene the Spanyards and *Guascar*. But *Atabaliba* considered with himselfe, that if this matter should come in question before the Gouvernour, aswell for that *Guascar* had iustice on his side, as also for the great abundance of gold by his brother offred, and knowing also the great loue and affection that the

Spaniards bare to the golden mettall, he feared by these meanes that the Kingdome should be geuen to his brother : yea, and so it might fall out, that for the causes aforsaid, he might be slain, to put all matter out of question, and therefore he determined to kil his said brother, yet he feared the enterprize, because he had heard say that the Christians haue a law among them, that whosoeuer did kill any of their nation, should therefore also be killed. And thereupon he deuised to proue the Gouvernours minde in that case, the which he put in vse with great industry, and on a day he fayned great sorrow, with teares and sobbinge, and would neither eate nor drinke, nor speake with anye man, although the Gouvernour did earnestly enportune him to declare the cause : At the length hee began to say, that hee had vnderstood and receiued newes, how a Captaine of his, seeing him Prisoner, had slayne his Brother *Guascar*, the which was no small greife for him, for he loued him not onely because he was his elder Brother, but rather hee held him in stead of a father, and although hee was the occasion to take him prisoner, it was not to the intende to hurte his person, nor yet to vsurpe his Kingdome, but only that hee should permit him to inioye his Prouince of *Quirto*, which his father had giuen vnto him, after that hee had conquered it : which Prouince was also out of the dominion of *Cusco*.

The Gouvernour hearing his sorrowful complaint, comforted him, and bid him be of good cheare, sayinge moreouer, that death was a thing natural : and when the Countrey should bee quited of all dissencion, then hee

would make informacion to know who they were which consented and procured his Brothers death, and punish them accordingly.

When *Atabaliba* perceiued that the Gouvernour tooke the matter so slightly, hee then fully determined to execute the thing which hee had deuised, and sente priuily to the Captaines, who had the keepinge of *Guascar*, expresse commission to kill him, which was forthwith committed with such speede, that it was neuer certainly knowen whither hee was slayne in the time that *Atabaliba* made his fained mourninge, or afterwarde, of which euill successe, the principall fault was laid to Captaine *Soto*, and *Pedro de Barrio*, who were so presise in their determined iorney to Cusco.

The Indians doth reporte then when *Guascar* saw that hee should die, hee said I haue beene a small while, Lord of this Land, and lesse shal be the traytour my Brother, by whose commaundement I now must die, beeing his naturall Prince: the which his words were well remembred: for when they saw *Atabaliba* slaine, as in this nexte Chapter shalbe declared, they called to remembrance his wordes, and said verely, that *Guascar* was a Prophet, and childe of the Sunne, consideringe how his wordes came to passe, hee also sayd, that when his Father departed from him, hee warned him, that when a white people, bearded, should come into the Countrey, that hee should submit him selfe vnto them, because (said hee) they shal be Lords ouer this Countrey, although this thy fathers Prophetie seemed strange, yet through the industry of the Diuel it might be known, for so much it happened before *Guaynacana* died. The

Lord Marques went conquering along the coast of PERU, and also when he abode in *Caxamalca* hee sent his Brother *Hernando Pizarro*, with certayne Horsemen, to discouer the Countrey, who proceeded till hee came to PACHACAMA, which standeth in the Prouince of GUAMACUCHO, where hee met with a Brother of *Atabaliba*, called *Illescas* who brought more than 300000. poyzes of Golde, towarde the raunsome of his Brother, beside a great quantitie of Plate: who after hee had passed many daungerous wayes, and perrilous Bridges, and was come to PACHACAMA, hee there had intelligence how a Captaine of Atabaliba called *Calicuchima*, abode in the Prouince of XAUXA with a great Armie, which might be about fortie leagues from that place, vnto whom he sent, requiring him to come vnto him, but the Indian Captayne denied his request: whereupon *Hernando Pizarro* determined to go and talke with him, although his men commended not his enterprise, to bee so bolde to put himselfe in his enemies power, who was a man of great might, but in fine, when *Pizarro* had spoken with him, and through his perswasion the Indian Captaine discharged his men, and went personally with him to CAXAMALCA, to see his Lord *Atabaliba*, but when hee should enter into the place where hee was, hee put of his shooes, and tooke vpon his shoulders the present, which they were wont to present him withall: and with sorrowfull countenance, the teares droppinge from his eyes, hee sayd: O Mighty Prince, if I had been with you at the time of your apprehencion, the Christians had now possessed your person.

*Atabaliba* answered, that it was Gods iudgement that

hee should be Prisoner, and also to be taken with so smal a company of strangers: But said hee, the principall occasion was the flight of my Captaine *Ruminagui*, with 5000. men, in whom I put my onely trust.

¶ How *Atabaliba* was slayne, and occasion was layde to his charge, how he went about to murder the Christians, and how *Don Diego de Almagro* came into *Peru*, the second time.  
Chap. 7.

THE Lord Marques *Pizarro*, Gouverneur, beeinge in the Prouince of *Poechos*, before hee came to *Caxamalca*, as before is declared, he receiued a priuye Letter without firme, which afterward was knowne to come from the Secretary of *Don Diego de Almagro*, from *Panama*, wherin was giuen to vnderstand, how *Don Diego* had built a great Ship, with the intent, that with the same and others he ment with al his power to passe personally into *PERU*, to intercept the Gouvernours proceedings, and to place and possesse, the best soyle in all the Land to his vse, which ground did lye beyond the Limittes, discovered by the Marques: the which according to a prouision receiued from the Emperour, did contayne from the Equinoctiall Lyne forward 250. Leagues, directly North, and South: This Letter the Gouverneur kept in secreat, and would make none of his freendes priuye thereunto, but yet hee beleeued, and it was true, that *Don Diego de Almagro* had taken shippinge, accordinge to the tenour of the Letter, which he had

received, and was on his way toward PERU, arriued at PUERTO VIEJO, where in effecte *Don Diego* after his arriual, vnderstood the good successe and proceedings of the Gouvernour, and how hee had in his power maruailous treasure, of Golde and Plate, wherof accordinge to the articles of agreement made betweene them, at the first beginning of the Discouery, the one half was, and did appertaine vnto him : Hee nowe knowinge that the Gouvernour had aduise of his comminge, and the same to be done by his owne Secretary, hee forthwith commaunded his Secretary to be hanged, and with all his power proceeded on his Iorney, till he came where the Gouvernour was in CAXAMALCA, where hee found a great part of the raunsome of *Atabaliba* gathered together, which was a strange sight both to him and his company, for they thoguth that in the whole world was not so much Golde and Siluer. And the same day that the Saymaister had made his ensay of the Gold and Plate, which belonged to the company. The Golde onely did amount to one Million, and eyght hundred thousand Poyzes : and yet the ensay was made verye slight, for the Golde was of greater value : the want of strong water was the defect, so that the ensay was made two or three Carets baser than the finenes, wherby the valuation was found 300000 Poyzes to litle. And concerning the Plate, the quantity was great, so that the Emperours fifte parte, amounted in fine siluer 600000. Poyzes, and yet in the same plate was Gold of three and foure Carettes : wherof the Emperour his parte was 300000. Poyzes, euery Horsman had for his share 12000. Poyzes in fine Golde, besides his part in Siluer :



and euery Footeman had a quarter part lesse then the Horsemen. Yet notwithstandinge, this great treasure, the one fifte parte of *Atabaliba* raunsome was not deliuered: and because that *Don Diego* brought with him a great company of men, there was alleaged that vnto them did not appertaine any portion of the raunsome of *Atabaliba*, for why? they were not at the takinge of him prisoner: yet the Gouvernour commaunded to giue vnto euery of them a thousand poyzes toward their cost. And determined to send his brother *Hernando Pizarro* to certifie the Emperour of his proceedings and good successe, and because the true account was not yet perfectly knowen, he sent vnto his Maiestie 100000. poyzes in gold, and 20000. markes of plate, contayning fve ducates to euery marke out of the whole stock: Which present was wrought in sundry sort of vessell according to the Indian vse, wherof some were great vessels for water or wine, called Tinages, chafing dishes, drummes, sheepe, figures of men and wemen, all wrought in the forsayd mettall.

With the said portion *Hernando Pizarro* tooke shipping with great grieve of his departing from *Atabaliba*, who loued him exceedingly, and sayde vnto him at his leaue takinge, O good Captaine go you now away? Truly your departure is greeuous vnto me, for when you are gone, I shal be slaine by this one eyed man, and this he spake by *Don Diego de Almagro* who had but one eye, as before hath beene declared.

Likewise he liked not the iesture of *Alonso Requelme*, who was Treasurer for his maiestie. And truly, poore *Atabaliba* iudged right, for as soone *Hernando Pizarro*

was departed, his death was conspired by meane of his Interpreter, who was named *Philip*, and was so called, because he had beene in Spayne with the Gouvernour, who most falsely accused his Prince, saying that hee was minded to murther secretly the Spaniards, and for that purpose, he had appoynted in secrete place a great number of Indians, and where the information was made by the mouth of *Philip*, who interpreted the witnes sayings, according to his owne pleasure. But the cause of his wicked dealing was not certainly knowen, but it was iudged to be one of two causes, which were, the one was thought he was in loue with one of *Atabaliba* wiues, thinkinge by his death to enioy his desire without peril of which his pretence, *Atabaliba* had vnderstanding, and thereof had made complaint to the gouernor, saying that that shameless ascent greued him more than his imprisonment, or yet any other mishap that might come vnto him, although it were present death, to see so base a man, and his subiect enterprise such villany, knowing the great punishment in his countrey prepared for such an offence, which was to burne aliue any that should attempt such things. The man being an offender was not alone thus punished, but also the woman, her father, mother, brethren and kindred, yea, euen the cattel of the aduouterer, and the town where he or she was borne, was destroyed and made vnhabitable, and the ground sowed with salt, the trees cut down, and the houses beaten flat with the ground, and other greeuous punishments were deuised in remembrance of the offence.

Others held opinion that the chiefe cause of *Atabaliba* his death, was the exceeding couetousnes of *Don Diego*

*de Almagro*, and also of his men, because it was told them that they had no right to haue any share of al that raunsome of *Atabaliba*, which they thought vnpossible to be perfourmed, although all the gold in the world were gathered together. Vpon which occasions, the soldyars of *Don Diego* desired the death of *Atabaliba*, saying, that as long as hee should liue, the Gouvernors men would say, that all the gold which should come to their hands was his raunsome, and they should not be partakers thereof. But be it as may be, they condemned him to death, wherat the poore Prince was not a litle amazed, saying that he neuer thought nor imagined the things which were layd to his charge, and for the verifying of the matter, that it might please him to lay more Irons on him, with greater garde, or to cary him aboard one of their shippes til the trueth were thorowly knowen. Hee sayd, moreuer, to the Gouvernour and the chiefest of hys companye. I know not for what cause yee doo iudge mee, for a man of so small iudgement, or to thinke that I would goe about to work treason, considering how I am your prisoner, and bound in Iron chaines, and also if any of my peopel should but shew them selues for any such purpose, yee might them with the least suspition, strike my head from my shoulders. And if ye thinke that any of my subiects shoulde come to rescue me against my wil, ye are also deceaued and know not what obedience my people beareth vnto me, for against my will the fowles of the ayre shall not flee, nor the leaues of the treas stirre.

All these allegations preuayled not, nor yet to geue great gages for the life of the basest Spanyard that

should pearish in the land. But sith it was thought among the Spaniards that it was not a lawfull cause to condemne him to death vpon suspicion, they charged him with the death of his brother *Guascar*, whereupon they gaue iudgement of death, and executed the sentence. But before his death he stil called for his frend *Hernando Pizarro*, who was gone toward Spayne, saying, if he had beene here I should not so wrongfully be put to death. And at the hower that he should die, he was baptized by the Bishop.

¶ How *Ruminagui* made insurrection in the Prouince of *Quirto*, and how the Gouvernour went to *Cusco*. Chap. 8.

THE Captaine in whom *Atabaliba* had put in his life time a great trust, as in the former Chapter is declared, and how he fled from the battaile in *CAXAMALCA*, with 5000. Indians: He (I say) beeing in the Prouince of *Quirto*, gathered to gether al the Indians of *Atabaliba* and possessed himself of the estate of that Countrey, compelling them to obey him as their right and only Lord. *Atabaliba* a little before his death sent his brother *Illescas* to *Quirto* to bring vnto him his children which *Ruminagui* most vnnaturally caused to be slayne.

When *Atabaliba* saw, that of force he should die, hee earnestly desired certaine of his Captaines, to see his body caried to the Prouince of *Quirto*, to be buried with

his Father *Guaynacaua*, the which requests, they faithfully performed, and when the dead body was brought to *QUITO*, *Ruminagui* receiued it with great honour, and buried him with his father, with great pompe and solemnitie, accordinge to the custome of the Countrey: and when the Funerals were ended, he caused a great drunken Feast to be made, in the which, when the Captaines that had brought the dead body were thoroughly drunke, hee commaunded them al to be slaine, among whom was *Illescas*, Brother to *Atabaliba*, who had his skinne plucked of beinge aliue, and with the same skin, hee couered the endes of a Drum, and his head hanging at the same Drumme.

In this meane while, the Lord Marques, Gouvernour, deuided all the Golde and Plate in *CAXAMALCA*, and when he had so done, he had aduice how one of *Atabalibas* Captaines called *Quixquix*, went up and downe in the countrey stirring the Indian People to insurrection, wher-vpon he determined no longer to abide, nor yet to tarry his comming in the Valley of *XAUXA*: hee also sent before his Captaine *Soto* with certaine of his Horsemen, and hee himselfe went in the Reregard.

In the Prouince of *Viecasinga*, the Indians came suddenly vpon Captaine *Soto*, in such sort, that hee stode in perrill of the ouerthrow, and foure of his men were slaine: but the day beeing spent, the night forced them to cease, and to retire to the Mountaines. The Gouvernour hearing of this great daunger of Captain *Soto*, sent *Don Diego de Almagro* to suckcour him, with certain Horsemen, so that the next morning, the Indians comming agayne to skirmish, the Christians made as though

they would fly, to allure the enemies down into the Playne, out of the daunger of the high places, from whence they did much hurt with their slinges : But the Indians suspectinge the pollicye of the Christians, retired backe againe, and kept their skirmishing neare the Wooddes, not knowing of the succour which was come, because of the great myst which did fall that morninge, they could not discry their comming, by meane wherof, the Christians had the victory, and slew many of the enemies. Then came the Gouvernour with the Reregard, at whose comming, came a brother of *Guascar*, and *Atabaliba*, who was chosen *Inga*, or King of the Land : by meane of their deathes, hee had receuied the great Tassell, which was as much as to saye, as the Crowne of the Princely estate, and was called *Paulo Inga* who certified the Gouvernour, how in the cittie of Cusco attended his comming a great number of men of War : with this newes hee letted not, but proceeded forward by his ordinary Iorneyes, vntil hee came in sight of the Cittie, out of which he saw assend a maruailous smoake, by meane wherof, hee iudged the Cittie to be on fier, and to the intent to preserue the same, he sent with all speede a company of Horsemen, but they were no sooner comen neare the cittie, when a great number of Indians came out to encounter with them, with slinges and sundry other sortes of weapons, in such sort, that the Spanyards were glad with all haste possible to retire, aboue the space of a long League where they met with the Gouvernour who vnderstandinge what had hapned, sente from thence his two Bretherne, *Ihon*, and *Gonsalo Pizarro*, with most of the Horsemen, who set vpon the

enemies on the Mountaine side, with such courage, that they caused them to retire, and in their flight slue many of them, vntill the night compelled them to cease. The Gouvernour seeing the good successe, gathered his army togeather, and the next day thinkinge to haue had resistance in his entrye into the Cittie, hee found not one man, to withstande him, so that hee and his companie entered peaceably where hee abode at pleasure.

Twentie daies after his abode in Cusco came newes, how *Quixquix* had a great Army wherwith he did great hurt, robbing and spoyling in the Prouince of *Condesuyo*: whereupon the Gouvernour sent Captaine *Soto* with 50. Horsemen, to disturbe his proceedinges: whose comming beeing knowen to *Quixquix*, hee durst not abide, but with all speede, fledde toward *Xauxa* thinkinge there to finde some small company of the Christians, whom hee might safely subdue, who were such as had remained behinde to keepe to Fardage, and the Kings portion of treasure, which was at the charge of *Alonso Requelme* Treasurer.

But the Spanyards hauing aduise of his presence, although they were but fewe, who in effecte attended in *Xauxa* for the purpose aforesaid, did so valyantly defende his enterprise, that his desire tooke no place, but rather was forced to passe forward the highe waye towardes *QUITO*.

When the Gouvernour had intelligence of the dealings of *Quixquix*, hee sent after him againe Captain *Soto*, with his company of Horsemen, and after him hee sente his Bretherne, who generally followed him aboue a hundred Leagues, and could not ouertake him: wher-

upon they returned agayne to Cusco, where they had as great a praye of Golde and Plate, as before they had in CAXAMALCA: the which the Gouvernour deuided amonge his Souldiers, and began to inhabite the Cittie, which was the head and Princely seate, of all the whole countrey of PERU: and so continued a long space among the Christians: hee also deuided the Indian People among the new Inhabitanes, which there determined to abide, for there were many of his men that were not willing to remaine there, but rather to returne into Spayne, to enioy the Treasure which they had gotten, both in Cusco and CAXAMALCA.

¶ How Captayne *Benalcasar*, went to the conquest of Quito. Chap. 9.

HERE before in this History, hath beene declared, howe at the time when the Gouvernour came into Peru, hee inhabited the Cittie of Saint MIGHEL, in the Prouince of TANGARARA, neare vnto the port of TUMBEZ, for the only intent that such as should come from Spaine, might haue a sure and safe Roade, or harbor for their ships: hee now considering that the number of his Horse were but few, which he left there, and after taking Prisoner of *Atabaliba*: hee sent for his Deputie from CAXAMALCA to Saint MIGHEL, Captaine *Benalcasar*, with ten Horses, at which time came many Indian CANARES to make their complaint against *Ruminagui* and his people saying, that daily they were by them molested with cruell War. At the same season were many men



comen from PANAMA and NICARAGUA, so that when Captain *Benalcasar*, had heard of the iniuries of the Indians of QUITO, hee chose 200. of those fresh men, wherof 80. Horsemen, and with them he toke his Iorney toward QUITO, aswel to defend the CANARES, as also for the great fame of Golde that was thought to bee in those partes, in the Treasury of *Atabaliba*, when *Ruminagui* had vnderstanding of the comming of Captain *Benalcasar*, hee came and encountered with him in manye daungerous passages, with the number of 12000. Indians, and also had many priuie snares made to intrap the Christians, in the high wayes: which pollicies *Benalcasar* did preuent with great diligence, for in the night season he sent 60. or 70. horsemen, to assure his way either aboue or beneath the accustomed high wayes, which was ordinarily done before the morning, so that with this industry, the enemy was forced to retire into the plaines, where they durst not abide the battaile, for the great spoile which the horsemen made among them but if by hap they staid in any place, it was where their vsuall snares were betweene them and the christians, which were great holes made in the ground, sticked ful of stakes, couered ouer with a false couering of grasse, straw and sand, or else with turues which was so wel handled, that with great difficultie those snares could be discouered, and might wel be compared to those which CÆSAR wryteth in his seuenth commentary, which the people of ALEXIA deuysed for the defence of their citie. But notwithstanding all their inuentions, they could not deceiue *Benalcasar*, and his chiefe pollicie was, that alwayes he would be sure not to giue any onset, where

the Indians shewed countenance to expect his comming, for there was alwayes the snares ordeyned : But rather he would goe and compasse them about 2. or 3. leagues to assaulte them on their backs, or sidewise with great aduise, not to passe vpon any greene thing that might seeme counterfaite.

But now the Indians seeing their practises would take no place, they deuised another practise, which was, they hauing vnderstanding, or at least suspecting, which way the Christians would passe, made certayne hoales in the ground, of the breadth of a horse foote, and som what deepe, not much distant one from the another, pretending by this pollicie to breake their horse legs. But yet their deuices could not preuail to deceue *Benalcasar*, who stil proceeded on, conquering as he went euen to the principal cittie of *QUITO*, where hee had aduertisement how *Ruminagui* had sayd vnto his Wiues (which were many) now shall you haue your desire and pleasure, for the Christians whom ye loue are at hand, with whom you may take your repast. But those poore wrechies thinking that he had spoaken those words in meriment or iest laughed at his sayings, which laughter cost them deere, for with meere ieliousie incontinent he cammaunded their heads to be stricken from their bodies, and when he had executed this cruell acte, he determined to flee, and forthwith he set on fyer a wardrope which was ful of rich princely ornauments, which sometime did belong for the ordinary apparel of *Guyana-caua*. When these his venemous factes were ended, he fled, and in his flight hee gaue a sodaine assault vpon the Spaniards, but no hurt done, so that now

entered BENALCASAR, and tooke quyet possession of the Citie.

In this meane season, the Lord Marques, Gouvernor, sent *Don Diego de Almagro*, to the new citie of S. MIGHEL, and there to take information of certaine newes which was certified vnto him, which was how *Don Pedro de Aluarado*, Gouvernour of GUATIMALLA, had taken shipping to come into PERU, with a great power both of horsemen and footmen, to discouer PERU, as more at large, shall be declared in the next chapter :

*Don Diego de Almagro* came into the Citie of S. MIGHEL, without hearing any further newes of that matter, but he had vnderstanding how *Benalcasar* was in the siege of QUITO, and of the resistance of *Rumina-gui*, whereupon he determined to goe succour him, and accordingly tooke that iorney in hand, which was 120. leagues from saint *Mighel*. And when he came to QUITO, he tooke all *Benalcasars* men, and ioyned them into his army, with whom he conquered certain townes, which vntill his comming would not yeeld, but when he saw that the great treasure of gold which he expected, could not be found, he returned toward Cusco, leaving Captaine *Benalcasar* for Gouvernour of QUITO, as he was before his comming.

¶ How *Don Pedro de Aluado* came into PERU, and  
what followed. Chap. 10.

AFTER that *Don Hernando Cortez*, Lord Marques of the Valley of HUAXACAC, had conquered and pacified the new Spayne, hee had vnderstanding of a countrey adioyning thereunto, called GUATIMALA: for the discouery thereof he sent one of hys Captaynes called *Don Pedro de Aluarado* who with the company which he had with him did conquere and winne the same, with great peril and danger: And in recompence of his paynes taken, the Emperour his maiesty gaue vnto him the gouernment of the same countrey. From whence he had intelligence of the Prouince of PERU, whereupon he besought his Maiestie, to graunt vnto him some parte of that discouery, which according to his request was giuen vnto him, with the conditions accustomed for discouerers. By vertue of which graunt vnder letters patent, he sent a Gentleman of the towne of CASEREZ, called *Gartia Holguin* with two shippes to discouer the coast of PERU, at whose returne bringing newes of the greate quantitie of golde which *Don Francisco Pizarro* had obtayned in his discouery, he determined personallie to take that iorney in hand, and whilest that *Don Francisco* was occupied in his affayres in CAXAMALCA, he imagined that he might easily procede beyond his iurisdiction, vpon his pretended discouery, and take possession of the Cittie of Cusco, which in his iudgemente did stand without the limittes of the 250. Leagues of ground, discovered and graunted in gouernment to *Don Francisco Pizarro*, and to bring the

better his purpose to effect, he feared least succour might come from NICARAGUA, to the Gouvernour, whereupon on a night he sayled to *Nicaragua*, where hee tooke by force two great shippes which were there rigging, to effect, that when they were trimmed, they should passe a company of men and horses to the Gouvernour *Pizarro* in PERU. In which shippes, and in his owne which he brought from GUATIMALLA, he embarked 500. horsemen and footemen, and with them sayled til he cameth to the coast of PUERTO VIEJO, and from thence hee tooke the way to QUITO by land, in the parallel of the Equinoctiall, along some part of the plaines among thickets, called ARCAUCOS, in which iorney they passed extreme necessity of victualles, as wel of meate as drinke, which would haue bene much greater, if by good hap they had not met and fallen into a ground of great Canes whose property was, that cutting any of them at the knot, they found the hollow full of sweete water, exceeding good and wholesome. Those canes are ordenarily as big as the calfe of a mans leg, so that betweene two knots of ech Canes of fresh water. cane was found a pottle of fresh water. They holde opinion the particular propertie of those canes is to gather water by attraction of the dewes which dayly fall in the night season, by meane whereof, although the sayd plaines are dry without any kinde of Springes, yet with this succour of water the campe of *Don Pedro* was wel comforted, aswel man as horses, yet notwithstanding their hunger was such, that they were forced to eate many of their horses, although eche horse was worth by iust valuation in that countrey, 5000. castelins in gold. And as they went on their iorney, the most part of that

Volcan.

low way, there rayned hote ashes vpon them, which afterward was knowen to come out of a VOLCAN which is not far from QUITO, out of the which proceedeth such a marueylous fyre, that lanced out ashes and imbers aboute 80. leagues compas, and sometimes the noyce and thundering that came from thence, was heard a hundred leagues of.

A perilous  
passage.

In all the townes and villages which *Don Pedro* passed through vnder the Equinoctiall Line, he found great plentie of Emraldes, and after he had passed to so troublesome wayes, whereof in many places hee and his men were forced to make way by force of hand, he then came vnto a loine of hilles couered with snow, where it snowed continually with an exceeding colde, through the which he was driuen to passe, where with the extremitie of cold dyed aboute sixtie of his men, although as many as were of his company, put on their bodies all the apparel which they had, to passe that extremitie of colde, yea they made such hast, that none of them would tary one for another neither to comfort nor helpe them: so that it hapned that a Spanyard who carried his wife and two daughters with him, and seeing them tired with wearines, and that hee could neither succour nor yet carry them away with him, hee hauinge his harte kindled with paternall loue, abode with them, where as they al foure were frozen to death, and although, he mought wel haue escaped, yet the loue of his wife and children was so great, that he rather desired to die, than to depart from them. So that to conclude, with this great daunger, the Captaine with his Armie passed these snowy Mountaines, holding themselues for most happy, when they

An Example  
of true Loue.

saw them selues on the other side, and gaue God praise, with exceedinge ioyful hartes : and although the Prouince of QUITO is inuironed with high Mountaines couered with snow, yet not withstandinge in the middell are temperate valleyes, both fresh and pleasant, where people inhabit, and haue plenty of corne.

At that instant, was so great a thaw of the snow of one of those mountaines, that the water which proceeded out of that snow, came downe with so great a furye, that it drowned a towne called CONTIEGA : the force of this water was so maruailous, that it draue stones bigger than any milstone downe with the streame, with such facilitie as if it had beene of Corke.

¶ How *Don Diego de Almagro*, met with *Don Pedro de Aluarado* and what passed betweene them. Chap. 11.

**B**Efore hath been declared, how *Don Diego de Almagro* hauing left for Gouvernour in QUITO Captaine *Benalcazar*, and not hauing perfect newes of the coming of *Don Pedro de Aluarado* into Peru, hee returned vnto Cusco in which iorney, he wan certain fortes and fortresses, where the Indians had lodged themselues for their safetie, in which affaires he was so long time occupied, that *Don Pedro* had time to aland his men, and came into the Prouince of QUITO, before *Don Diego* had therof intelligence, by mean of the great distance of way which is betweene those places, and also where no towne of contractation is, neither of Christians nor yet of Indians. As he went on a day conquering the

prouince of LIRIBAMBA, he passed ouer a mightie riuer with great peril, for the Indians had broken down the bridges, so that he was forced to wade ouer in the shallowest place that he coulde finde, and when he was comen ouer he found ready to receiue him a great number of Indians men of war, against whom the victory hee had obtayned with great difficultie: for their wemen did great hurt, with slings: yet notwithstanding the Indians had the ouerthrow, and their Cascike was taken prisoner, who certified *Don Diego* that *Don Pedro de Aluaro* was 15. leagues from thence, besieging a fort, wherin was an Indian captaine called *Sopasopagui*. When *Don Diego* had vnderstanding of these newes, forthwith he sent seuen horsemen to discry his camp, but their fortune was to be taken prisoner by *Don Pedro* his men: notwithstanding hee released them againe, and came with all his power and pitched his campe within fiue leagues of the Real *Don Diego*, with determinate intent to breake with him, and to take from him both his men and countrey. When *Don Diego* saw the great aduantage that his enemies had, he determined to returne to Cusco, with only 25. horsemen, and to leaue the residue with captaine *Benalcasar* for to defend the countrey. At this instant the Indian Interpreter, called PHILIP, of whom mention hath beene made, who was the only cause of *Atabalibas* death, and fearing punishment for the same, he fled from his master, and went vnto *Don Pedro*, he also caryed with him one principal Cascike, and priuely conserted with *Don Diegos* army, that when he sent for them, they should pas vnto *Don Pedro* his side. When PHILIP was come to *Don*



*Pedro* his presence, he offered to put into hys hands al A traitor. that countrey in quyet possession. He aduertised him also that *Don Diego* was retied vnto Cusco, and moreouer he said that if it would please him to apprehand him, he might now doe it with great facilitie, for (quoth he) he hath but 250. men of the which are 80. horsemen. *Don Pedro* geuing credit to the false Interpreter, forthwith began to direct his way toward *Don Diego*, whom he found in *Liribamba*, with determination to die in the defence of the countrey. *Don Pedro*, in like manner, set his company in good order, and with spread ensigne was in redines to geue the onset. But *Don Diego* hauing but few horsemen meant to resist his encounter on foote: whereupon he deuided his men into two quadernes, with the one was Captaine *Benalcasar*, and he himselfe had the other: And in this order being in sight one of the other, there began a parle of peace, and for that purpose to stay the battel for one day and a night, in which meane time, the Licenteat *Calera* tooke vp the matter betweene them in this sort: that *Don Diego de Almagro* should pay vnto *Don Pedro de Aluarado* 100000. poysez of gold for his shippes, horses, and all 100000. poizes for agreement. other furniture of his nauy, and that they should both goe frendly to gether to visite the Lord Marques *Pisarro*, and that there the payment should be made. This agreement was accepted, and also kept in great secret: for if *Don Pedro* his men had vnderstoode these dealings, among whom were many gentlemen, some tumult might haue rysen, considering that the remuneration of their seruice was not spoken of, the premises considered, and proclamation was made that they should trauell in vni-

formitie of company together, in such sort that *Don Pedro* his nauie should continue on his nauigation along the sea coast, proceeding on his discouery, and that al his men should be at liberty, either to abide vnder Captaine *Benalcasar* at *QUITO*, or els to go with their general by sea, considering that now they were all linked in peace, brotherly loue, and conformity: When this order was manifestly knowne, many of *D. Pedro* his men abode in *QUITO*, and *Don Diego*, and *Don Pedro* with al the residue of their retinue came together to *PACHACAMA*, where they had knowledge that the Gouvernour *Pisarro* was come from *XAUXA* to receue them. The Night before *Don Diego* departed from the Prouince of *QUITO*, he burned alieue the Cascike that fled from him, and the like had bene done to Philip the interpreter, if *Don Pedro* had not intreated for him.

Iustice.

¶ How *Don Diego de Almagro*, and *Don Pedro de Aluarado* met with the Cascike *Quixquix*, and what passed betweene them. Chap. 12.

**D***On Diego* and *D. Pedro* going on their iorney from the prouince of *QUITO* toward *Pachacama*, the Cascik of the *Canares* enfourmed them how *Quixquix* who was some time a Captain appertaining to *Atabaliba* was comming toward them with an army of 12000. Indians men of war, and that daily his hoast increased: But (quoth he) if ye wil abide his comming, I will deliuer him into your handes: Vnto whose words *Don*

*Diego* gaue no credit, but proceeded on his iorney, and would not tarry their comming, so that when they were come to the Prouince of *CHAPARA*, they espyed about 2000. Indians which were come about two dayes iorney before their Generall *Quixquix* vnder another Captaine called *Sotaurco*, because *Quixquix* vsed alwayes this pollicie in the way as he went, to haue the said Captaine alwayes in his vauntgard, and on his left hand he had likewise 4000. Indians who gathered victuals in al the villages as they passed: he also vsed in his reregard other 3. or 4000. Indians, who followed one daies iorney behind the rest, and *Quixquix* went in the midst with the body of the host, with their cattel and prisoners, so that his whole army did always occupy 15. leagues in circuit. And wheras *Sotaurco* his meaning was to haue taken a passage that he thought the christians of force should pas, to which place *Don Pedro* was come before him, where he took him prisoner, and of him had vnderstanding of al *Quixquix* his pretence, whereupon on a night he prepared an ambush of his horsemen, although he could not so soon bring his purpose to passe, because he was forced to stay the shooring of his horses, who had passed a perilous way of rocks and stones, by reason whereof they were vnshooed. So that leauing his pretended ambush, he made al hast possible till he came within sight of *Quixquix* his camp, who when he had espyed the Christians, he toke another course with his wiues and seruile people, and he placed a brother of Atabaliba called *Guaypalcon*, with the chiefest of his soldyers in another part with *Don Diego de Almagro*, going vp a hil, hauing horses welnigh tired with the

troublesome way which he had passed, and with much adoe leading them by their brydels, they came to the hill top: They also receaued great hurt with the stones which the enemies rolled down the high hilles vpon them: notwithstanding, at the length, the christians enuyroned *Guaypalcon*, who seeing himselfe so besieged on euery side, hee then fortyfied him and his company on the top of a high cragged rock, where he stooode to his defence vntil night, at what time *Don Diego*, and *Don Pedro* sounded the retire for their soldyers: and the Indians with the darknes of the night came from their hold to seeke their General *Quixquix*. Afterward was knownen how the Indians on the left winge had slaine and cut of the heads of xiiii. Spaniards which they had taken at aduantage, and proceeded on their way til they met with the reregard of *Quixquix*. The Indians made them strong at the passage of a ryuer, so that all one day they suffered not the Spaniards to passe, but forced them to seeke another way, which was toward the mountaines, where the Spaniards meant to haue taken a high hil, but they receaued great damage in their pretended purpose, for when they would haue retired, the cragged and troublesome way was their hynderance: by meane wherof, many were wounded, especially Captaine *Alonso de Aluardo*, who was thrust through the thighe, and one another Knight of the order of *S. Ihon*, sore wounded: all that night the Indians kept good watche, but in the morning the passage was left cleare, that the Christians might passe at ease, and the enemy driuen into the Mountaine, where they rested in peace. *Don Diego* would no longer abide, but proceeded on his iorney: all

14. Span-  
yardes, be-  
hedded.

the stuffe which the Indians could not carry with them they burned, leauing behinde them about 15000. Sheepe, and 4000. men and wemen, which yeelded themselues to the Spanyardes, hauing been prisoners vnto *Quixquix*.

When the Christians were come to S. MIGHEL, *Don Diego de Almagro*, sent *Diego de Mora* to PUERTO VIEJO to receaue to his vse the Nauy of *Don Pedro de Aluarado*, who on his behalfe sent to that effect, *Garcia de Holgun* to make deliuary of the same accordingly: and afterward *Don Diego* in the Citie of S. MIGHEL prouided aswell his owne men, as *Don Pedro* his men, of all furniture necessary for the warres, and the like money and apparel: this doon, they took their iorney toward PACHACAMA: and in the way as he went, he left inhabited the citie of TRUGILLIO, in the gouernment of Captain *Martine Astete*, according to the order of the Gouvernor *Don Francesco Pizarro*. In this meane while, *Quixquix* comming nere vnto QUITO one of the Captaines appertaining to Captaine *Benalcasar*, gaue the ouerthrow to his vauntgarde, and thereby put him in such an agony that he knew not what to doo: and moreouer his Captaines of greatest trust, perswaded him to yeeld to *Benalcasar*: but in recompence of their counsel, he threatned them with the reward of death, and commaunded that they should prepare them selues to retire, but his men not hauinge furniture of victuals for their returne, his captaines ioyned together, and toke for their chieftaine *Guaypalan*, who in the name and voyce of all the rest, saide vnto him, that it were much better for them to die in fight with christians, than to perrish

with hunger in the retire into places vnhabited: Vnto which sute and request, *Quixquix* gaue a lowring answere, whereupon *Guaypalan* strake him to the hart with his Launce, and incontinent came other of his captaynes, who with club and hatchets made him into peeces, and then the souldiers scattered them selues some one way, and some another, euen at their own pleasure.

¶ How the Gouvernor paid *Don Pedro de Aluarado* the 100000. poyzes for the agrement, and how *Don Diego* would haue (perforce) bin receiued Gouvernor in the Cittie of *Cusco*.  
Chap. 13.

WHEN *Don Diego* and *Don Pedro* were come to *PADIACACAMA*, the gouernor who was come thither from *Xauxa*, receeued and entertained them ioyfully, and also according to agreement, paid vnto *Don Pedro* the 100000. poyzes in ready gold, for his Nauy brought from *GAUTIMALA*, although there were many that perswaded him to stay the payment, alleaging that the fleete was not worth so much money, no, nor yet the one halfe of the said sum, and that the former bargaine was made by *Don Diego* with feare, considering that *Don Pedro* had great aduantage of him, and sende him prisoner to the Emperors Maiestie. And although the Gouvernor might haue taken that counsell, and also haue brought it to passe accordingly without perrill: yet hee chose rather to ratifie and performe the worde and promise of his freend *Don Diego de Almagro*, and notwithstandinge the counsel of his captaines, he made

present paiment of the 100000. payzes in good gold, and than permitted him quietly and freendly to depart, and to passe vnto his gouernment of GUATIMILA, and he himself abode, and tooke order for the habitacion and citzens of the Cittie of the Kings, and brought from *Xauxa* the dwellers there, to inhabit the said citie, because it seemed vnto him a singular place of contraccacion, and exceeding holsome for mans health. From this citie departed *Don Diego de Almagro* with a great company toward the Citie of Cusco, and the Gouvernor went to reforme the buildings and other things in the Citie of TRUGILLO, and to make reperticion of the ground among the citzens: In this meane season came newes, how *Don Diego de Almagro* ment to possesse the citie of Cusco to his only gouernment because he had receiued aduertisement, by *Hernando Pizarro* how the Emperor had graunted vnto him the gouernment of one 100. leagues of ground, beyond the limits of the gouernment of *Don Francisco Pizarro*: which according to heresay did not extend so far as Cusco, but against this opinion and possession, both *Ihon Pizarro*, and *Gonsalo Pizarro*, the Gouvernors bretherne, did not only speake against, but also resist with many of their freends, which daily came vnto them: and also when the matter came in question in the Council house of the Citie, among the principallest of the Citzens, the greatest number helde with the Gouvernour, *Pizarro* and his Bretherne.

When the Lord Marques had perfecte relation of the proceeding in Cusco, he forthwith toke his iorney thither by post, so that with his presence, al controuersies were ended, and pardoned *Don Diego* of his offence, who

was not a little amazed, because he had intermeddled in so waighty a matter, without iust title or prouission from his Maiestie, but only with the newes of heresay, he presumed to take the Office vpon him: so that now againe they confirmed their former freendship and company, with this condicion, that *Don Diego de Almagro* should go to discouer the countrey toward the South Sea: and if he should finde the lande fruitful and to his content, that then he would make sute to the Emperour, to graunt vnto him the gouernment therof: And if it happened that hee could not finde any soyle to his content, that then the land vnder the gouernment of *Don Francisco Pizarro* should bee equally deuided betweene them both: And upon this conclusion, eache of them made a solemne othe, at the communion of the holy sacrament, to performe the couenantes made tweene them: and furthermore, at the same communion time, *Don Diego* pronounced these wordes saying: Lord I beseech thee, than, when I breake this oth before thee made, that than thou confound mee body and soule. When these thinges were done, *Don Diego* began to prepare thinges necessary for his iorney, with 500. men, which he had vnder his charge, and the Lord Marques returned to the citie of the Kings, and sent *Alonso de Aluarado* to conquer the countrey of the CHACHAPOYAS, which standeth distant 70. leagues from TRUGILLIO, among the Mountaynes: in which conquest, both hee and those which went in his company passed great misery and troubles, vntil they had pacified, and inhabited the countrey, for whose paynes the Gouernment of that Conquest was giuen vnto him.

A solemne  
othe.



# THE THIRD BOOKE,

*Containeth the Iorney that Don Diego de Almagro made into Chili, and of thinges that hapned in the meane season in Peru, and how the Indians rebelled.*

¶ How *Don Diego de Almagro* tooke his iorney toward *Chili*. Chap. I.

**D***On Diego de Almagro*, departed on the discouery of his conquest, with whom went 570. horsemen and footemen, well prouided of all furniture necessary: yea there were some citizens that left their houses and repartitions to goe with him: He sent before him *Iuan de Sayauedra*, born in the cittie of CIVIL in ANDOLUXIA, with 100. men, who in the Prouince which afterward was called CHARCAS, met with certain Indians which came from CHILI, not knowinge what had passed in PERU, to geue their obedience to *Inga*, and to present him with certaine wedges of fine gold, which wayed 150000. poizes: which pray he tooke, and also was determined to haue taken *Gabriel de Rojas*, who had the charge of iustice by the appointment of the Gouvernour *Pisarro*, and hauing vnderstanding of his pretence, fled to the citie of Cusco, and *Don Diego* with all his power proceeded on his way, at the time when *Mango Inga*, who sometime had the state and crown of PERU, departed from Cusco, as before hath him declared, he (I sayd) agreed with his brother called PAULO, and with another called VILLAOMO, who was high priest among the

Indians, which two persons of authority, with a great number of the Indian people, went in company with *Don Diego*, that when hee thought him selfe in most securitie, they should set vpon him, to murther both him and his retinue, and concerning the gouernor who abode in PERU, he would also take the like order to despatch him, and his army: at the time of this conclusion, INGA commaunded to sow the ground that victuales might not want when time should require, of which prouision the Spanyardes had no vnderstanding. But when *Villaoma* could not bring his purpose to effect at CHARCAS, he came flying to Cusco. And when *Don Diego* was entred into the Countrey of CHILI, PHILIP the Interpreter (who was priuie to all the conspiracie) fled likewise, howbeit hee was taken by certaine Spanyardes that followed him, and aswel for this treason, as the other that he committed in QUITO: the Gouernour commaunded his body to be cut in quarters, who at the time of his death, confessed that hee was the only cause of the vniust death of *Atabaliba*, only to haue his wife at the commaundement, as before hath beene rehearsed. And as *Don Diego* was occupied in the conquest of CHILI, a seruant of his named *Iuan de Herrada*, ouertooke him, he it was that his said master had left in the citie of the kings, to gather more soldyars for his seruice in the discouery, who brought vnto him a prouision, which *Hernando Pizarro* had brought out of Spayne for him, by vertue of the which, the Emperour had made him Gouernour of one hundred Leagues of ground, beyonde the borders and limits of the iurisdiction and gouernment of *Don Francisco Pizarro*, the which office and

Iustice.

gouvernemente was called in the letters patentes, new *TOLEDO*, for the Precincte of *Don Francisco* his Iurisdiction was named, new *CASTILE*. But now *Don Diego* iudging that the cittie of *Cusco* did fall within the compasse of his Regiment, without any respect of his former othe which hee so solemnly had made, hee determined to cease and leaue of the discouery which hee had in hand, and to returne to take into possion the Citie of *Cusco*.

¶ Of the troubles which *Don Diego de Almagro* passed in his iorney toward *Chili*, and of some other particularities of that countrey. Chap. 2.

CREATE were the troubles which *Don Diego* and his company passed in the iorney toward *Chili*, aswel with hunger and thirst, as also with encounter of Indians, which were mightie great men of groweth. Also there were in some places exceeding good archers, who were clothed in Zeale skinnes: But the extreeme colde did much annoy them, as well the bitter sharpe aire, as the frost and snow, and also the passage ouer the mountaines, which were couered with snow, where it hapned that a captaine called *Ruydias*, who followed *Don Diego de Almagro*, had many of his men and horses frozen to death, for neither their apparrel nor armour could resist the exceeding sharpnes of the aire, which did so vehemently penetrate, and freese them. The extremitie of this cold was such that at the end of fīue moneths, when *Don Diego* returned toward *Cusco*, he found some of his

company which had followed outward, frozen to death, standing on their feete leaning vpon the Rockes, and holding their horse bridels in their hands: and their horses likewise frozen to death, as fresh without corruption, as though at that instant they had dyed.

The carases of which horses was a great reliefe for his men at his said returne, for want of other victualles, and after they were past the extremitie of cold, then came they into such a wilderness, without any kinde of habitation, where they stode in as great a neede of water to drinke, so that their chiefe remedy was to carrye with them from the snowy hilles, sheepes skinnes full of water, in such sort, that euery liue sheepe carryed on his backe, the skinne of an other dead sheepe full of water. Among diuerse properties, which the sheepe of PERU haue, one is, the strength of their ordinarye burden is half a hundred waight, and many times three quarters of a hundred, beeing laden vpon them as Cammels vse to carry their ladinge, and are in makeinge much like vnto Cammels, sauing that they want the knop on the backe: The Spanyardes hath now brought them to such purpose, that they will carrye a man also in a rode Saddell, foure or fiue leagues a day, and when they feele themselves weary, they vse to lye downe, and will not rise againe although they should bee beaten neuer so much, or lifted vp with strength vpon their feete, yet they will not goe one foote further except they bee vnladen: And it happeneth often times, that whan any rideth vpon them, and they feelinge themselves weary, they then lifte vp their heades, and looketh vpon him that spurreth them, and calleth out of their mouthes a thing of an

exceeding euill sauor, which is thought to be of the foode which lieth in their stomackes.

They are beastes of great commoditie, and their wooll is in euery respect as fine as silke, expecially, one sorte or kinde of them, called PALOS: their feedinge is very small cheefely such as labor, whose ordinary meate is MAIZ, also they drinke very seldome (that is to say) once in foure or fīue daies: the flesh of them is passing good, and in euery respecte as good, or rather better then the sheepe in CASTILE: of this kinde of flesh, all the countrey is abundantly prouided, and in euery Citie and towne, it is the principallest flesh in the Shambles, although at the first comming thither of the Spanyardes, they vsed no shambles: for why? euery one had cattayle of his owne, and whan one Neighbour killed any sort of Beast, his other neighbors might haue therof, what they would require.

In certaine places of CHILI, were many Abstruses in the Plaines, so that when they were disposed to hunte them, the Spanyards would ride post after them, and very seldome could ouertake any, although their flight was on their feete, runninge and hoppinge: and although their bodies were hugie and waighty, yet with their leapes, a good horse runninge neuer so swifte, could very seldome out runne them.

There are also many running Riuers, which runneth in the dry season, and at night not a whit, which is a thinge to be noted, and especially, among them that vnderstand not the reason therof: which is, that in the day time the sun melteth the snow and Ise of the Mountaines, so that the water that commeth from those high hilles in the day maketh great Riuers, and at night

30. degrees.

Note.

all remaineth frozen againe. But after we passe 500. leagues along the coast, and come into 30. degrees, on the other side of the Equinoctial toward the Southward, there is plenty of rayne, and also al windes as ordinarily do blow, as it doth in Spaine, and other places Eastward. All the countrey of CHILI, is inhabited, and hath aswel plaine ground as mountaines, and by reason of many crekes and bayes, which are in the sea coast of this lande: So that saylinge North and South, requireth sundry windes. *Chili* standeth in 40. degrees, as is saide, North and South, from the Cittie of the Kinges, till you passe to the said 40. degrees in altitude: the countrey is very temperate, and hath Winter and Summer in due season, accordinge to the qualitie of CASTILE, and their North Starre is in comparison like vnto ours, sauinge alwayes hee is accompanied with a litle white clowde: this starre according to Astronomers opinion, is called Pole ANTARTIKE, and hath also not farre from him the crosse starres, with other three more, that follweth him in their order, and mouinge so that there are seuen starres that attendeth on that North star, which differ not much from ours, which the sayd Astronomers called TRITON, sauinge that the fourth which are toward the South, standeth crossewise, and are ioyned nearer together than ours: our North Star also is cleane out of sight: within 200. leagues of PANAMA, comming directly vnder the Equinoctiall Line, where at one instant, is easily seen both those Tritons, or North starres, ARTIKE, and ANTARTIKE, although a great space from the Pole ANTARTIKE, seemeth most playne the foure crosse starres: by the moouinge

wherof, the Sea faringe men do keepe their reckoninge, and when they come to 30. degrees, then all the other three starres serue for their purpose.

In this cuntry of CHILI, the daye differeth from the night, and the night from the day, according to the course of the yeare, as it doth in Spayne, although not by the same times.

In the Lande of PERU, and in the Prouince of TIERRA FIRME, and also in al other places there adioyninge to the Equinoctiall: the day and night is equall throughout all the yeare: and if at any time in the cittie of the Kinges, the daye or night increase or diminishe, it is so small a thing that it can not easely be decerned.

The Indians of CHILI, goe apparelled like vnto the Indians of PERU, both men and wemen are of goodiecture, and feede ordinarily of such meate as those of PERU.

Beyond CHILI 38. degrees from the Line, are two greate men of power, which maintaine alwayes war, the one against the other, and eche of them is of power to bringe into the felde 200000. men of war: the one was named *Leuchengorma* which is Lord of an Iland, which standeth two leagues from the firme land, dedicated to his Idols, in which Iland standeth a great Temple, whereunto appertained 2000. Preestes.

The Indians of this LEUCHENGORMA, informed the Spanyardes, that 50. leagues beyond that place, between two Riuers, was a great Prouince, all inhabited with wemen, which consente not to have any sorte of man among them, except a certaine time conuenient for generacion: and then if any happen to be with childe, *Amazones*. and bring forth men children, they are after certain

Maake.

yeares sent to their fathers, and the daughters which they likewise beare, remaineth with them: these women also are in subiection to *Leuchengorma*. The Queene of these women is called *Guayboymilla*, which in their language, is as much to say, as Heauen of Golde, because the reporte was, that great quantitie of Gold groweth there, and therof they make exceeding ritch cloth, and all their commodities, they paye tribute to *Leuchengorma*. And although oftentimes the Spanyards hath had notice of this countrey, yet they neuer tooke the discouery in hande, because *Don Diego* would not abide to inhabit in that coast: and also sithence that time, *Pedro de Valdiuia* was sent to inhabit the countrey, who could not bring his desire of furniture to passe, conuenient for the voiage, although he hath inhabited 33. degrees beyond the Equinoctiall Southward, and also perfect knowledge of habitation was knowne to be vnto 40. degrees alonge that coast, especiall ye one shippe, which *Don Gabriell de Cararauayall*, Bishop of PLAZENSIA, sent in discouery, which had passed through the Strayght of MAGALANES, who from the said straite came sayling along that coast Norward, vntil he arriued at the port of the city of the kings, and before the comminge of this ship there was no memory of Rats found in all Peru, so that it seemeth that the first broode of Rats came out of that ship, and sithens that time, al the citties of Peru are replenished with abundance: it is thought that among chests and fardels of marchandize they were carried from place to place: whereupon the Indians do name them OCOCHA, which is to say, a vermine comen out of the sea.



¶ Of the Returne of *Hernando Pizarro* into *Peru*, and of the dispatch which hee brought with him, and of the rebellion of the Indians. Chap. 3.

**A**Fter that *Don Diego de Almagro*, was departed from *Cusco*, *Hernando Pizarro* came from *Spain*, hauing receeued at the Emperors hand greate fauoure, who also made him Knight of the Order of S. James : He also brought for his brother *Don Francisco*, prorogation for certaine leagues of ground in his gouernment. And also the prouision which hath beene spoken of, for the gouernment of *Don Diego de Almagro*. At this instant *MANGO INGA*, Lord of *PERU*, was prisoner in *Cusco*, for the conspiracie which he had wrought against the Christians, with his brother *Paulo Inga*, and *Villaoma Almagro* wrote vnto *Ihon Pizarro* requesting him to set them at libertie, because he was loth that *Hernando Pizarro* should finde them prisoners at his comming to *Cusco*, at which time *Ihon Pizarro* was in the conquest of *COLLAO*, and at the sight of his letter, they were discharged out of pryson.

When *Hernando Pizarro* was come to *Cusco*, he became a singular good freend to *Inga*, and vsed hym verie curteously notwithstanding, he had alwaies regarde to attende vnto hym. It was thoughte that this freendship was to the intent to craue some golde of hym for his Maiestie, or els for hym self. So that after two monethes that he was come to *Cusco*, *Inga* besought hym to graunt vnto hym leauue to goe vnto *YNCAJA*, to celebrate a certaine feast, and in consideration of his courtesie, he promised to bryng vnto hym an Image of golde, whiche

was made in remembraunce of his Father *Guaynacaua*, bothe in proportion and likenesse: the couetous desire of golde, caused *Hernando Pizarro* to graunt his request. And when he was comen to YNCAYA, he put in vre the conspiracie which he had pretended since the tyme that *D. Diego de Almagro* departed from CHILI, so findyng hymself at the place where he required to bee: He began to murder certaine Miners that wrought in the gold Mines, and other housband men whiche were in the fieldes, he also sent one of his Captaines with a great number of his people, to take the Fortresse of *Cusco*, the whiche his commaundement was doen accordyngly: so that in sixe daies the Spanyards could scarcely winne the Fortresse againe, and at the winnyng therof *Ihon Pizarro* was slaine in the night season with a stone, whiche strake hym on the heade, so that by the meane of an other wound whiche he had on his head, he could not suffer his head peece, his death was bewailed throughout the lande. And certainly the losse of his persone was greate, because he was a valliant manne, and well experienced in the warres of that countrey, and singularly beloued of all men.

Death of  
Ihon Pizarro.

When *Inga* had intelligence of the death of *Ihon Pizarro*, he came with all his power vpon the Citie, and besieged it for the space of eight Monethes and more: and at euery full Moone he assaulted the Citie of euery side, how be it *Hernando Pizarro* and his brethren defended his assaulte like vallient gentlemen, with many other Captaines, and approued good Souldiers whiche were within the Citie, especially *Gabriell de Rojas*, *Hernando Ponso de Leon*, *Don Alanso Henriquez*, and the

Treasurer *Requelme*, and many others, who vnarmed them selues neither daie nor night: and did assuredly beleue, that the Gouvernot and all the other Spanyardes were slaine by the Indians, because thei had knowledge that all the lande had rebelled, and were occupied in the warres. So that these valliant minded men fought so manfully, as men that expected no humane succour, but only put their trust in the help from GOD alone: although thei daiely deminished by the handes of the INDIANS. In the meane while that the warre and siege endured, *Gonsalo Pizarro* with other twentie horsemen came out of the Citie, to vewe the siege, and proceded forward till thei came to the Lake called CHINICHERA, which stooode fīue leagues distant from the Citie, where the enemies came so thicke, and thronged vppon hym, who, although he and his companie fought valliauntly, yet thei had yelded, if *Hernando Pizarro* and *Alonso de Turo*, had not rescued them with an other companie of horsemen, because *Gonsalo* had entered too farre among the enemies, whiche he did with greater courage then wisdome.

¶ How *Don Diego de Almagro* came with his power  
vpon Cusco, and tooke prisoner *Hernando*  
*Pizarro*. Chap. 4.

HERE before hath been declared, how *Iuan de Herrada* caried into the prouince of CHILI, to *Don Diego de Almagro*, the prouision which the Emperour had graunted to hym, concernyng his newe gouernation,

whiche did extend beyond the limites of *Don Francisco Pizarro* his graunt, whereupon he determined to returne, for his pretended discouerie of CHILI, and to take the Citie of Cusco into his power: to whiche purpose, the gentlemen which were in his companie encouraged hym, to make all the hast possible, especially *Gomes de Aluarado*, brother to *Pedro de Aluarado* and his Uncle *Diego de Aluarado*, and *Rodrigo Orgonios*: among whom, some desired the reparation of the Citie and Countrey, and other coueted to bee alone in the gouernation of CHILI, so that to bryng this matter to passe, thei deuised to cause their interpreters to proclaime, that *Don Francisco Pizarro*, and all his companie of Spanyardes were slaine by the INDIANS which had rebelled, who had like wise vnderstandyng of the rebellion of *Inga*. So that now *Don Diego* tooke this enterprise in hande, and when he was come within sixe leagues of Cusco, without giuing knowledge to *Hernando Pizarro* of his commyng, he wrote to *Inga*, promisyng to pardon all that was paste, if he would become his freend, and assist hym in his pretended purpose, alledging moreouer, that all the lande appertainyng to Cusco, was within the precinct of his gouernement, wherefore his meanyng was to possesse the same. But *Inga* deceitfully sent hym woorde, that he should come personally and talke with hym, and so he did, with suspition of some decepte: Wherefore he lefte some of his menne with *Iuan de Sayauedra*, and tooke the reste with hym. But when *Inga* espied tyme conuenient, he sette vppon hym with suche a vehement courage, that *Don Diego* was glad to retire. In the meane season, *Hernando Pizarro*, hauyng knowledge of his

commynge, went to visite *Iuan de Sayauedra* at his Campe, and mought haue taken hym prisoner if he had would, as the Citezens of Cusco had counsailed hym to doe, but he would not, rather when he had spoken with hym, he retourned backe vnto the Citie, without the giuyng vnto him of any vngentle language. How be it, *Iuan de Sayauedra* reported afterward, that he had offered vnto him 5000. poyzes in gold, to deliuer into his power all the men which were in his companie, and that he refused the money. When *Don Diego* was returned from *Inga*, he came with all his armie in the sight of the Citie with his Ensignes spread, where he tooke fower horsemen, whiche *Hernando Pizarro* had sent to talke with him, he also sent to require the state and cheef Magistrates of the Citie, to receiue hym for their gouernour accordyng to the Emperours letters Patentes graunted to hym, which were ready to bee seen. The saied Magistrates made answere, sayng: that he should cause the limittes of his graunt to be measured with *Don Francisco Pizarro*, and when it should be veriefied that the Citie of Cusco, should fall out of the league of ground specified in the graunt of *Don Francisco*, then would thei yeelde to his request, and also obeye hym, as reason and duetie should require. But their wise and gentle aunswere was neuer performed: By meane wherof after did followe such great damage, slaughter, and discorde, betweene these twoo valliaunt Captaines: and although sundrie tymes thei mette to measure by line the lande, that should appertaine to eche of them, yet their neuer agreed vpon the cause: for sometymes thei would saie that the leagues of lande, appertainyng to the gouernation of

*Don Francisco*, should be measured along the sea coste, acceptyng into the reconyng all Creekes, Bayes, and crooked heade landes, or Capes. Others held opinion that the measure should bee by lande, acceptyng likewise into the accompte all crooked waies, whiche of force were to bee gonne almoste circular, and not directly straight. So that by eche of these twoo reconynges, the gouernement of *Don Francisco* did furnishe a great waie, before thei could come to Cusco : yea some saied, before thei could come to the Citie of Kynges. But *Don Francisco* pretended that their opinions were not iuste, not lawfull in that forme of measuring : but rather saied he, that thei should measure according to the rules of the ALTITUDE of the Sunne, allowing the due number of leagues to euery degree, beginnyng at the EQUINOC-TIALL LINE, accordyng to Astronomers reconyng in the Northe and Southe course, by the superior line, and in so doyng the Citie should fall into the iurisdiction of *Pisarro*. But bee it as maie bee : for as yet vntill this daie the matter was neuer agreed vpon, that is to say, whether the Citie of Cusco doeth fall into the newe Castile, or in the newe Toledo, although sundrie, bothe Pilotes and learned Geometrecians hath met to decide the cause, especially the Licentiat *Vaca de Castro* who had a per-ticular Commission touching that matter, and as yet sentence was neuer pronounced. But now letting this discord cease, and returnyng again to the Historie.

*Hernando Pisarro*, sent woorde vnto *Don Diego* that he would prefer a certaine parte of the Citie, for hym and his retinewe to lodge in, and in the meane while he would ad-uertise his brother *Don Francisco*, of his demaunde : who

at that instaunt was abiding in the Citie of the Kyngs, to the intent that some order might be taken betweene them, considering that thei were bothe freends and companions: And to treat of this matter, some doe affirme, that truce was taken vpon that condition, so that vnder that conclusion, eche one held him self to be in securitie. *Hernando Pizarro* caused that night all the Citizens and menne of warre, to take their reste in their houses, because thei were greatly wearied with watchyng, and wearyng their armour daies and nightes, without taking any rest at all.

When *Don Diego* had aduise of the Citezens reste and securitie, and the night beyng verie darke, especially through a darke Cloude, whiche at that instaunt couered the Citie, he forwith assaulted the Citie. But when *Hernando* and *Gonsalo Pizarro* heard the noise, thei made great haste in arming them selues, and their house beeyng the first that was asaulted, thei like valliant gentlemen defended them selues, vntill thei had set fire on euery side of the house, whereupon thei yelded, and were in this order taken prisoners.

The next daie following *Don Diego* compelled the counsaill of the Citie, to receiue hym for their cheef ruler and Gouvernour: and also commaunded *Hernando* and *Gonsalo Pizarro* to be put in Irons, yea and many of his counsellors wished hym to put them to death, the whoich counsell he refused considering the noble courage and minde, whiche thei shewed in the defence of their hause, so that thei were put in the custodie of *Diego de Aluarado*. Also it was credibly thought that certaine Indians were the occasion, that *Don Diego* did

breake the truse that was made, and also some Spanyardes, who brough newes vnto hym, that *Hernando Pizarro* had commaunded to breake downe the bridges, and the Fortresse in the Citie, whiche newes seemed to bee the verie originall cause. For when *Don Diego* entered into the Citie, he spake these words with a loude voyce: Oh how haue ye deceiued me with your deceitfull newes, for here I finde bothe bridges and euerything whole and sounde.

Of all these proceedinges the Gouvernor *Pizarro*, knewe nothing, nor many daies after the takyng of the citie, and imprisonment of his brethren, *Don Diego de Almagro* made Paulo brother to Atabaliba kyng and gaue vnto him the Tassal of the Empire, the whiche newes beeing knowne to his brether *Mango Inga*, he fledde with a greate number of his people into certaine asperous Mountaines called *Andes*.

¶ How the Indians slue many that the Gouvernor sent to succour his brethren in *Cusco*. Chap. 5.

**E**Mong other thynges which the Gouvernour *Don Francisco Pizarro* sent to craue of the Emperour, he besought his Maiestie in remuneration of his seruice doen in the conquest of Peru, to graunt him 20000. Indians perpetually to hym and his discendentes, in a Prouince called *ATAMBILLOS*, withe their Rentcs, Tributes, and Iurisdiction, with title of Lorde Marques of that place and people. The Emperour aunswered, that as touchyng the Indian people he would take aduise-



ment, and also of the qualitie of the Countrey, and what profite or damage thereof might growe: and that in consideration of his seruice, he would so gratifie hym as lawfully with reason he should thinke conuenient, so that at his request the title of Lord Marques was graunted, and the Emperour commaunded that from thence forth he should be so called. And therefore hereafter in the prosecution of this Historie we will call hym by the name of Lorde Marques.

The Lorde Marques hauyng vnderstandyng of the rebellion of the Indians, and not thinking the matter would haue come to suche extremitie, he began to sende succour of men, to his brother *Hernando Pizarro*, to Cusco, by little and little as he could gette them, by tenne, and fiftene at a tyme.

The Indians also haeryng of this weake succour, appointed many men of warre to attende their commyng at euery dangerous passage that was in their waie, so that as many as the Lorde Marques sent in this order, were as fast murdered by those Indians, which thyng would not so haue fallen out if he had sent them all together. And as he went to visite the cities of TRUGILLIO, and saint Mighell, he determined to sende one *Diego Pizarro*, with 70. horsemen, to the succour of his brethren, al the whiche the Indians slue at a straight passage, which of force thei should goe, and at this daie is called the hill of PARCOS, which standeth fiftie leagues from Cusco: and the like happened to the Marques his brother in Lawe, called *Gonsalo de Tapia*, who he sent afterward with 80. horsemen: thei also put to the worse Captaine *Morgonjo* and Captaine *Gaete* with their companies, yea, fewe or

none of them escaped : so that those which alwaies followed last, could haue no knowledge of the successe of those which went before. And an other policie the Indians also vsed, which was, thei would let them passe, till thei came into a Valley betweene twoo Hilles, and then would thei enuiron them bothe before and behinde, and from the high places came the stones as thicke as Haile, beeyng throwne with slynges in suche sort, that thei slue many of them, before thei could come to hand strokes. So that thei slue aboute 300. horsemen and tooke from them greate quantities of Iewells Armour and apparrell of silke.

300. horse-  
men slaine  
by the  
Indians.

Now the Marques hauyng no aunswre from none of those succours, he sent *Francisco Godoy* born in CACERES with 45. horsemen, who by chaunce mette with onely twoo men, which had serued vnder Capitaine *Gaete*, and escaped from the tyranny of the Indians : so that by then he had intelligence of all that had passed, whereupon he returned with all speede, although he was almoste taken in the snare of his fellowes, and was followed by the Indians aboute twentie leagues, and daiely by them encountered before, and in the reregarde : So that he was forced to trauaile in the night season, for feare of the multitude of enemies. And when he was come to the Citie of Kynges, whither also was comen Capitaine *Diego de Aguero*, with certaine men that had escaped the Indians rage.

The Marques had vnderstandyng how a greate nomber of the Indian enemies followed Capitaine *Aguero*, wherevpon he sent *Pedro de Lerma* with 70. horsemen, and many Indians his freendes, to encounter with the

souldiars of Inga: with whom thei fought almoste a whole daie, vntil the enemies were forced to take a high Rocke for their holde and sauegarde. Whereunto the Spanyardes laied siege on euery side: the same daie captaine *Lorma* had his teeth broken with the stripe of a stone, and also nine of his men were wounded, and one horseman slaine. But the Christians draue them into so greate an extremitie, that if the Marques had not commaunded them to retire, thei would that daie haue ended the warres: because the Indians were in extreame miserie shutt vp in their fort, and no waie to help them selues. So that the Spanyardes seeyng them selues free from the tyrannie of their enemies, thei gaue vnto God mooste hartie thanks, and thus doen thei remoued their Campe vnto an high hille, that standeth not far from the Citie of the Kynges, daiely skirmishyng with the enemies.

The cheefe Captaine of the Indians was called *Tysoyopangui*, and the brother of *Inga*, which the Marques sent with Captaine *Gaete*, in these warres whiche the Indians attempted nere the Citie of the Kynges, it happened that many Indians who were seruauntes of the Spanyardes called *Yanaconas*, serued the Indians of the Warres in the daie season for wages, and at night came to their Supper and lodgyng with their maisters.

¶ How the Marques sent into diuers partes to requier succour, and how Captaine *Alonso de Aluarado* came to aide hym. Chap. 6.

THE Lorde Marques seying such a greate number of INDIAN enemies in redinesse, for the besiging of the cite of the Kynges : he then thought assuredly that *Hernando Pizarro*, and all his companie in Cusco were slaine, and that the insurrection and rebellion and generall through the lande, thinkyng also that *Don Diego* had the like successe in CHILI. And because the Indians should not thinke, that with feare he kept his Nauie of shippes, to flie in them when neede should require. And also that the Spanyardes should not haue hope of succour to repair to the saied shippes, to escape out of the lande, and by that meane to fight with lesse courage, then man-hood should require, he commaunded the shippes to be sent from thence to PANAMA. He sent also messengers to the Viceroye of the newe Spaine, and to all the Christian gouernours of all the Indies : crauyng their fauor and helpe, aduertisyng them of the great danger that he was in. Signifiyng the same with woordes, not of such courage as he was wont to shewe in other thynges. But it should seeme that his so doying, was though the perswasion of some faint harted persone, which counselled hym so to doe.

The policie  
of a good  
Captaine.

He sent likewise to his lieutenant of TRUGILLIO, commaunding hym to leaue the Citie without people, and to embarke their wiues, children, and goddes in a ship which he sent for that purpose, that thei might be

conuayed to the firm lande, and he with all the rest of the citezens to come with their horses and armor to aide him. Because he thought assuredly that the Indian enemies would come and spoile their citie, and he not able to defende them. So that he iudged the surest waie to bee, to ioine them selues together in one bodie: yet he required that their comming should be in secret. When the inhabitantes of TRUGILLIO were ready to depart towards the Marques, came thither Captaine *Alonso de Aluarado* with all his companie, who was come from the discouerie of CHACHAPOYAS, beying also sent for, by the Marques, and hauyng lefte a certaine companie of men of warre in the Citie of TRUGILO, for the sauegarde of the same, thei came al together to the Citie of the Kynges to aide the Marques, who louyngly entertained them. And incontinent made *Alonso de Aluarado* capitaine general, in lue of *Pedro de Lerma*, who vntill that tyme had enioyed that office, yet the vnplac-ing of hym was so greeuous vnto hym, that afterward it caused Mutynie, as in place and tyme shalbe declared.

When the Marques sawe him self so well prouided of men and other furniture necessarie, he determined to succour, where moste neede shaould require. Where-upon he sent Captaine *Alonso de Aluarado* with 300. Spanyardes, footemen and horsemen to discrie the coun-trey: who proceeding on his iorney about 4. leagues from the citie, in PACHACAMA he had a sharpe battaile with the Indians, of whom he had the victorie, and slue many of them: this doen, he tooke the way toward Cusco, in which iourney passyng through the countrey vnhabited,

he suffered great penurie, and onely for want of water, died about 500. of his Indians with thirst, who were labourers and caried his baggage, and if the light horsemen had not been, who roade by poste with certain vessells for water, whiche was the meane to saue the liues of a greate number mo of the footemen, whiche were all in danger of the same ende. As he in this maner proceeded forward, he ouertooke in the Prouince of *XAUXA Gomes de Tordoya*, naturall *de Villa Nueva de Barca Rota*, who had in his companie 200. footemen and horsemen, so that thei were now in number 500. men, with whom *Alonso de Aluarado* tooke his waie to the bridge called *LUMJCHACA*, where the Indians had enuironed them on euery side, and hauyng their battaile together, the Christians had the victorie, yet thei ceased not skirmishyng vntill thei came to the bridge called *ABANCAY*, where *Alonso de Aluarado* had vnderstanding of the imprisenment of *Hernando* and *Gonsalo Pizarro*, and of all the affaires which passed in *Cusco*, so that he determined to procede no further, vntil he should haue further commission from the Marques. When *Don Diego de Almagro* had notice of the commyng of *Alonso de Aluarado*, he sent vnto hym *Diego de Aluarado* with other seuen horsemen, to notifie vnto hym the prouision graunted by the Emperor. Who at their commyng *Alonso de Aluarado* tooke them prisoners: sayyng that the Lord Marques ought to be cited with their prouisions, and not he who was no parte for suche matters. But when *Don Diego* sawe that his messengers returned not againe fearyng lest *Alonso de Aluarado*, ment to enter into *Cusco* by some other waie.

About xv. daies after he came with his whole power, determyng to set vpon *Aluarado*, because he vnderstandyng how *Pedro de Lerma* had practised a Mutinie, for to passe vnto him with 80. men, and when *Don Diego* drewe night to *Aluarado*, his scoute, toke prisoner *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*, who was a light horsemean to *Aluarado*, who hauing intelligence of his imprisonment, was minded like wise to apprehende *Pedro de Lerma* vpon suspition: who fled from him the same night, carryng with hym the liues of all those, whiche had promised their faithe and freendship to *Don Diego*.

On a night *Don Diego* came to the bridge, hauyng knowledge how *Gomes de Tordoya*, and a sonne of the Coronel *Vilalna*, were tariyng his commyng, who had sent ouer at a shallow place many of the men, whiche wer of the conspiracie with *Pedro de Lerma*, who were encouraged to passe the water without feare. It was manifestly knowne, that some of the conspirators who watched that night had stolne aboue fiftie Lances, whiche thei brought awaie with them. So that when *Alonso de Aluarado* was minded to have attempted the battaile, he founde the conspirators missing, and many moe of his men whiche went to seeke their Lances that were stollen from them in the night watch, were also wanting: by meane wherof *Don Diego* obtained the victorie without bloudshedding, sauing that *Rodrigo Orgonios* had his teeth broken with the stripe of a stone. Now when the spoile was deuided, and *Aluarado* taken prisoner, *Don Diego* returned to Cusco, where he shewed some bitternes of crueltie to his prisoners, yea and so exalted him self in pride, that he letted not to saie, that

Pride hath  
a fall at  
length.

in short space he would not leaue one of the name of *Pisarro* to stumble at in all the dominion of Peru. He said also that the Marques might goe rule among the *MANGLAREZ*, which dwell vnder the *EQUINOCTIAL* line, if he list to gouerne.

¶ How the lorde Marques tooke his iourney to Cusco to succour his brethren, and hearyng of the ouerthrow of *Alonso de Aluarado* he retourned backe to the Citie of the Kynges. Chap. 7.

WITH the victorie whiche *Alonso de Aluarado* had obtained against the Indians, as soon as he was departed from the citie of the Kynges toward Cusco, as well in *PACHACAMA* as in *LUMYCHACA*, as before hath been declared, *Inga* and *Tisoyopanguj* were glad to retire from the siege of the citie of the Kynges. Where vpon the Marques seyng hym self at libertie, and with a greate companie of men at his commaundement, he determined to take his iourney towards Cusco, to succour his brethren: and caried in his companie 700. horsmen and footemen, thinkyng that his aide should haue been against the Indians onely. For he knewe nothing of the returne of *Don Diego de Almagro* from his discouerie nor yet of any thyng whiche had happened.

Many of his souldiars which he caried with hym, were sent vnto hym by *Don Alonso de Fuen Mayor* Arch-bishopp, and lorde President of the Iland of *SANTO DOMINGO*, with his brother *Diego de Fuen Mayor* brought like wise a certain number of men from *PANAMA*, and also *Diego de Ayala* was retourned from *NICARAGUA*



with an other companie of men. So that the Marques proceedyng on his iourney, vntill he came to the plaines in the Prouince DE NASEA, whiche standeth distant 25. leagues from the Citie of the Kynges, where he had newes of the returne of *Don Diego* from his discouerie, and also of all other perticularities which had happened, since his commyng, as before at large hath been rehearsed: the greef of those proceedynges, moued his pacience not a little, yet notwithstanding, he considered, that his armie was furnished to fight with Indians, and not armed to warre with Spanyardes. Wherefore he determined to returne back againe to the Citie of the Kynges, to encrease his power with more men: and to accomplish his pretence, forthwith he put in ure his returne. Sending vnto Cusco, the Licentiat *Espinosa* to take order in the pacifyng of the broiles which were begun, and to enforme *Don Diego*, that if the Emperour should knowe of the discord that was happened betweene them, that then he would send an other to take the charge from them bothe, and enioye the lande whiche thei had gotten with suche greate trauaill and perilles. The Marques also desired hym, that when he could not make any lawfull agrement between them, yet at the least that it might please *Don Diego* to sette his brethren at libertie, and he to abide in Cusco, and not to proceade any further, till the matter should bee consulted, and the Emperour to explaine and declare, what eche of them should quietly gouerne and possesse.

With this Embassage, the Licentiat *Espinosa* departed on his iourney, how bee it, he could not bryng to passe any of those thinges, which were committed to his dis-

cretion. But whilst he was dealing in the agreement, he fell sicke and died. And *Don Diego* with his men, came doune to the plaines, leauyng in the citie, for his lieutenant, Captaine *Gabriell de Rojas*, in whose power he left prisoners *Gonsalo Pizarro*, and *Alonso Aluarado*, and caried *Hernando Pizarro* prisoner in his companie, and in this order he continued on his iourney, till he came to the Prouince of CHINCHA, whiche is within 20. leagues of the Citie of Kynges, and there he builde a Towne in remembraunce of his possession of gouernement.

¶ How the Marques ioyned his armie, and how *Alonso de Aluarado* and *Gonsalo Pizarro* scaped out of Prison, and what other things happened. Chap. 8.

WHEN the Marques was returned to the Citie of the Kynges, he commaunded all his men to bee paid for their seruice, his armie multiplied by reason, that he gaue to vnderstand how he ment to goe to resist and defende hym self against *Don Diego de Almagro*, who was commyng to inuade his gouernation, so that in fewe daies his armie encreased to the number of 500. footemen and horsemen, among whom were many Hargubuziers, by meane that *Pedro de Vergara* was retourned from the discouerie of BRACAMIROS, and come in companie with *Diego de Fuenmayor*, who had brought from Flaunders, where he was married, a greate number of Hargubuziers with all furniture to them belongyng, for vntill his commyng, were but fiue in all PERU. Whereupon the Marques appointed for Captaines on

the Hargubuziers, the said *Pedro de Vergara*, and *Nunio de Castro*, and *Diego Urbina*, born in ORDONIA, who was Nephewe to the Campe maister, he ordained Captaine of the Pikemen. He also appointed *Diego de Rojas* Captaine of the Horsemen, with *Porausuerex* and *Alonso de Mercadillio*, and now he named *Pedro de Valdiuja* Campe maister, and *Antonio de Vilalua*, cheefe Sariant.

In this meane while, *Gonsalo Pizarro* and *Alonso de Alu- ardo*, who remained Prisoners in Cusco, brake Prisone and came to the Marques with the number of fiftie per- sones, who had also taken Prisoner, *Gabriell de Rojas* Lieutenant of *Don Diego de Almagro*, with whose com- myng the Marques reioyced excedyngly, not onely because thei had escaped the perill that thei were in, but also their commyng was a great encouragement to all his armie. So that now he appointed *Gonsalo Pizarro* Captaine General, and *Alonso de Aluarado* Captaine of the Horsemen.

But when *Don Diego de Almagro* vnderstoode the skape made by his prisoners, and the mightie power of the Marques, he determined to come to some agreement with hym, yea, and he hymself to make the first motion, for which purpose, he sent with his full power and auctoritie, *Don Alonso Henrriquez*, and the Emperors Factor, called *Diego Nunez de Mercado*, and also the Auditor *Iuan de Gusman*, to deal with the Marques vpon some quiet conclusion. Who when thei were come to the Marques and declared their message, he was contented to put the matter in compromise in the handes of the reuerend father *Francisco de Bonadilla*, and *Don Diego* consented thereunto. Whereupon eache partie

hauyng discovered his greefe, and made whole relation of eache cause: father Francisco hauyng indifferently vnderstoode the matter pronounced sentence, in the which he commaunded that first and principally, *Hernando Pizarro*, who was prisoner, should be set at libertie, and the possession of the Citie of Cusco, restored to the Marques as in his first estate, and that bothe their armies should forthwith be discharged, and to bee sent to discover further Countries as before that tyme was pretended: and that both parties should enforme the Emperour of all their proceedinges, to such ende that his Maiestie might take order in their matters of discord. And that bothe the Marques and *Don Diego*, should come personally to talke the one with the other, and for that purpose, eache of them should meete at a Towne called MALA, and bring with each of them 12. Horsemen and no moe: Whiche Towne did stande in the midwaie of their two Campes. And vpon the pronouncing of this sentence, their tooke their waie toward the Towne of MALA, although *Gonsalo Pizarro* gaue no great credit to the truce that was taken, nor yet to the woordes of *Don Diego* wherevpon he with the whole armie came after them, and secretly lodged his men neare vnto the saied Towne, commaunding Captaine *Castro* to lai himselfe in ambushe in a certain Cane field with 40. Har- gubusiers, which was in the high waie that *Don Diego* should passe: to the extent that *Don Diego* should bring with him a greater number of men then was agreed vpon, that then thei should discharge their peeces against them, by whiche token he would also be readie with his companie.

¶ How the two Gouvernors mette, and how *Hernando Pizarro* was set at libertie. Chap. 9.

WHEN *Don Diego* departed from CHINICHA, to go to the Towne of MALA with his 12. Horsemen, he left order with *Rodrigo Orgonios* who was his generall, that he should be in readinesse, that if the Marques did happen to bring moe men than was agreed vpon, that then he repaire with his armie, and that he should vse *Hernando Pizarro*, according as he should see, how the dealing fell out at their meeting.

When these two Gentlemen met, thei embrased the one the other very louingly, and after many wordes and much talke had betwixt them, without any speech of the principall matter. A gentleman appertaining to the Marques, came to *Don Diego* and tolde hym in his eare saying. My Lord get you hence with all speede possible, for it importeth you so to doe, and I as your frende and seruitor, do so aduise you. This warnyng he gaue vnto hym, because he vnderstoode of the commyng of *Gonsalo Pizarro*: *Don Diego* geuyng credit to his frendes worde, called in haste for his horse, and when certaine of the Marques Gentilmen perceiued that he would departe, thei perswaded their Lorde to apprehende hym, considering he might easely doe it with the Hargubuzers, which *Nunjo de Castro* had in ambush. But the Marques would in no wise consent thereunto, because he had giuen his worde to the contrarie, nor yet would not beleeue that *Don Diego* would returne, with out some order takyng between them.

And when *Don Diego* in the waie as he returned,

espied the ambushe, then he gaue credite to the aduise whiche was giuen hym, and when he was come to his Campe, he complained of the Marques, saying that his meaning was to haue taken him Prisoner, and by no means the Marques could not otherwise perswade hym. Yet not withstanding, by intercession of *Diego de Aluarado*, *Don Diego de Almagro* released *Hernando Pizarro* vpon certaine promises made betweene them, among the whiche, one was that the Marques should graunt vnto him a ship and safe harbor, so sende for despatches which were comen from Spaine for hym, and also vntill the Emperour had taken order in their discention, the one should not deale with the other: But *Rodrigo Orgonios* did withstande and speake against the libertie of *Hernando Pizarro*, because he knewe of vncurteous dealyng whiche was vsed against hym, in the time of his imprisonment in Cusco: Iudgyng that when he should inioye his libertie, he would reuenge those iniuries receiued, so that alwaies his counsell was that his head should bee taken from his shoulders. But yet the opinion of *Diego de Aluarado* was of greater efficacie, hopying in the agreement that was taken.

When *Hernando Pizarro* was clearly released, *Don Diego* sent hym to the Marques his brother, accompanied with his sonne and other Gentlemen: he was no sooner gone, when *Don Diego* repented hym of that whiche he had doen, yea, and it is thought that he whould haue apprehended hym againe, if he had not made greate haste on his waie, euen vntill he met with many of the principall Gentlemen whiche serued the Marques, who were come to receiue hym.

¶ How the Marques proceeded against *Don Diego* and how he returned towarde Cusco. Chap. 10.

WHEN the agreement was made betweene *Hernando Pizarro* and *Don Diego*, the Marques had receiued new prouisions from the Emperour, whiche *Pedro Ansurez* had brought, wherein was conteined that eache of the gouernors should possesse and inioye the lande, which eache of them had discouered, inhabited and conquered at the tyme of the notfiyng of his Maiesties prouision, although it were with in the limittes of the other gouernation, vntill his Maiestie should prouide in the principall cause, what iustice should require.

So that when the Marques had receiued this order, after that his brother *Hernando Pizarro* was set at libertie, he sent to require *Don Diego* that he should depart out of that countrey and Townes, whiche he had bothe discouered and inhabited accordyng to the Emperours commaundement. *Don Diego* aunswered that he was readie to obaie the prouision and the contents thereof, whiche was : that eache of them should abide in the possession which thei were in, at the tyme when his Maiesties prouision should bee notified vnto them, or either of them. So that in like forme *Don Diego* required the Marques to obaie and obserue the same, and to suffer him quietly to inioye his possession without warre or contention, with protestation to obaie any other determination or order, that his Maiestie hereafter should take in their discorde dependyng.

The Marques replied, that he first discouered, conquered, and inhabited, all the Townes, Cities, and coun-

trety of Cusco, and that by his wrong meanes and force, he was now dispossessed of proper right. Therefore once againe he required hym to leaue his former possession vnto hym, accordyng to the plaine meanyng of his Maiesties commaundement, for otherwise, he would compell him to auoide, willyng him also to consider, that the tyme of truce taken betweene them, was now expired.

When the Marques sawe than *Don Diego* would not conforme himself with the Emperors commaundement, but rather scan the plaine wordes of the prouision to his own will, he proceeded to giue hym battaile with all his power, and *Don Diego* retired as fast towarde Cusco, makyng hym strong in a high Mountaine called *Guaycara* which laie in the waie as he went, workyng all the pollicie and mischiefe whiche he could deuise, to spoyle the high waie for to hinder and disturbe the Marques passage. But *Hernando Pizarro* with a companie of men followed hym at the heeles, and on a night by a secrete waie he assended into the Mountaine, and with his Har-gubuzeirs he entercepted his waie, so that *Don Diego* was forced to flye: and findyng himself some what euill at ease, he made the more hast leauyng in his Reregard *Rodrigo Orgonios*, who in good order continued the retire, and also hauyng vnderstandyng by two of the Marques companie whom he had taken prisoners, how the Marques followed with al hast possible, he also made the greater haste on his waie, although some of his Souldiars gaue him counsell to abide to encounter with hym, sayyng that all those which ascended the Mountaine, were the first daies as men that wer sea sicke. But this opinion *Rodrigo Orgonios* liked not, because the gouernor *Don*



*Diego*, had giuen him a contrary commission : Yet the Souldiers iudgement was helde among men of experience for the best waie, and would so haue fallen out if it had bin accepted, for truthe it was that the Marques company were three first daies, like men that were so sicke and farre out of order, with wearinesse of the passage through the snoe in the Mountaines : in consideration whereof, the Marques descended doune into the plaines, and *Don Diego* passed to Cusco, alwaies breakyng doune the bridges, and spoylyng the high waies as he went, thinking that the Marques had followed hym, and when he was entred the Citie of Cusco, he abode there two monethes, ioynnyng all his whole power and force of men together, trimmyng and setting in good order his armor, municion, and all his furniture necessarie for the warres, he wrought weapons of siluer and copper, and of the same mettall he cast ordenance and sortes of Artillerie.

¶ How *Hernando Pizarro* came to Cusco with his armie and fought the battaile at Salinas, and took *Don Diego de Almagro* Prisoner. Chap. 11.

THE Marques with all his armie beeyng in the plaines hauing descended from the Mountaines he found among his Captaines sundrie opinions concerning the procedinges. But in time it was concluded, that *Hernando Pizarro* should goe with the Hoste which was there in readinesse, for the Marques Lieutenant vnto the Citie of Cusco, and his brother *Gonsalo Pizarro*, to be his Captaine generall, with title and voyce to execute

iustice to certaine Citizens of Cusco which were in his companie, who had made complaint of wrong that had bin doen vnto them by *Don Diego de Almagro*, who had taken their houses, landes, and Indian slaues from them against equitie and right. In this sorte the armie marched on, and the Marques returned to the Citie of the Kinges, and his brother *Hernando Pizarro* by ordinaire iourneys, came to the citie on an euenyng, all his Captaines desired that thei might rest that night belowe in the plaines, rather he commaunded to pitche his Campe in the Mountaine.

The next mornyng followyng, *Rodrigo Orgonios* was attendyng his commyng with all his power in battaill arraie hauing for Captaine of his horsemen, *Francisco de Chaues*, *Iuan Tellio*, and *Vincent de Gueuara*, and on the Mountaine side, he had certaine Spaniardes, with a greate number of Indians to aide them, and al the frendes and seruitors of the Marques which were in the Citie, were apprehended and kept prisoners in two seuerall partes of the Citie, who were so many and imprisoned in so narrow a roome, that many of them were stifled. The next daie following *Gonsalo Pizarro* and his men hauing made their praiers vnto God, descendyng from the Mountaine doune into the plaines, where he ordained Quadrons and marched towarde the Citie, with intention to plante hym self vpon a high plot of ground that standeth nere to the forte of the Citie, thinkyng that *Don Diego* should discrie his mightie power, that he would refuse the battaile, the whiche was desired for many considerations, and specially the great bloodshed that was like to followe.

Notwithstanding *Rodrigo Orgonios* was in the feeld with all his power and munition, attendyng the battaile, thinkyng that he could not bee damnified by any other waie, because of a certaine Marishe ground that was nere vnto them. But when *Hernando Pizarro* had vewed his enemies power: he commaunded Captaine *Merca-dillio* to be ready with his horsemen, as well to fight with the Indians if thei made any offer of fight, as to succour the maine battaile, if neede required. So that now before the ioyning of the battaile, there began a skirmish betwene the Indians of *Don Diego*, and the Indian freendes of the Marques. Then began the horsmen of *Pizarro* to passe the Marishe grounde, and in the meane while the Hargabuzers shot of against a Quadron of horsemen of *Don Diego* his side, with suche courage, that the horsemen retired. But when *Pedro de Valdiuja* Campe maister to the Marques saw the retire, he assured them of victorie on his side. Then was a peece of greate Ordenance shot from *Don Diego* his side, whiche slue fwe of the Marques his men. But when *Hernando Pizarro* had passed the Marishe ground, and a certain ronnyng brooke, also, he went with good deliberation to encounter with the enemye, aduertisyng euery Captaine what he should doe, at the tyme that the onset should be giuen, and with noble minde and courage he cherished and consorted his men, and when he sawe the Pikemen of *Don Diego* in a readinesse with their Pikes, he commaunded the Hargabuzers to shote at the Pikes, so that with two dewes of shot, thei spoiled about fiftie Pikes. But when *Rodrigo Orgonios* sawe this, he commanded his Captaines to giue the onset, who were

An vncom-  
fortable  
Captaine.

somewhat slowe in the obeying of his commandement, whereupon he hym self brake forth with the main battaile towarde the left side, where he sawe *Hernando Pizarro* like a valliaunt Captaine before his Quadrons. And *Orgonios* went cryng with a loude voice, sayyng : O VERBUM DIUINUM, followe me, ye that hath liste, for I goe to die.

When *Gonsalo Pizarro* and *Alonso de Aluarado*, sawe the traues, that *Orgonios* set forth, thei brake in vpon the enemies, and at the first encounter it threwe to the ground aboue fiftie men : and when *Rodrigo Orgonios* came to the rescue, he was wounded with the bullet of a Hargabuze in his forehead, which bullet passed through his hedpeece. And after that he was wounded, he slue two men, and thrust with his lance a seruant of *Hernando Pizarro* in at his mouthe, thinking that it had been *Pizarro* hym self because he was well armed, and gallantly attired. And when bothe the armies were ioyned, the battaile was on bothe sides valliantly fought, vntill at length the Marques his side had the better hand, and *Don Diego* his men began to turne their backes and flie, in which flight a number were slaine. But when *Don Diego* who stood on a high place to se the battaile, because he was somewhat euill at ease, sawe his men flie he saied : By our lorde God, I had thought that we had come hither to fight. Then happened twoo horsmen to haue taken prisoner *Rodrigo Orgonios*, vnto whom came another, who had in tyme paste receiued a certaine iniurie at his hande, and in reuenge of the same, strake of his hedde : and in such sort were vsed other some that had yelded them selues, and yet *Hernando Pizarro*

could not defende them, although bothe he and his capitaines did what thei might: and the cause was, that where the souldiards of *Alonso de Aluarado* had receuied by them the afrent at the bridge of *AUANCAV*, thei now procured to reuenge by al the meanes that might be deuised. Yet the reuenge was suich, that where Captain *Ruidiaz* caried one behinde hym, who had yeelded hymself, there came another, and slue hym with a Lance.

When *Don Diego* saw his armie ouerthrowen, he went and lodged himself in the fortres of the Citie, where *Gonsalo Pizarro* and *Alonso de Aluarado* tooke him prisoner. The Indians seyng the battaill ended, thei left fighting also: so that the one and the other of them went to strip the ded bodies of the Spaniardes. Yea, and some of them were not fully ded, but yet were also stripped naked: for by reason of their woundes, thei could not defend them selues from those that stripped them naked, and there was none to disturbe them for the victors minded no other thing, but to follow the victorie: Yet bothe conquerers and conquered escaped such encounter, that it had been a very easie thyng for the Indians, to have consumed them all, if thei had been of courage, seing the weakenesse that thei were in. This battaill was fough the 26. daie of Aprill 1538.

¶ What passed after the battaill of Salinas, otherwise called Salt pit, and how Hernando Pizarro came to Spain. Chap. 12.

WHEN the battaill was finished, *Hernando Pizarro* tooke greate paines, to obtaine the loue and good will of the Captaines, which had serued *Don Diego*, and remained aliuē. And when he sawe that he could not bryng his desire to passe he banished many out of the Citie, and seeyng that he had not possibilitie, to gratifie those that had serued hym : for eche of them did thynke, that if all the gouernement had been giuen hym, yet the paiment was not sufficient, whereuppon he determined, to deuide his hoste, and to sende his warriors to discouer the Lande, which he had knowledge of wherein he brought to passe two thynges : The one, to remunerate his freendes, and the other to banishe his enemies. So that he sent Captaine *Pedro de Candia* with three hundred of his owne menne, whereof parte were of those of *Don Diego*, to take in hande a certaine conquest which had fame of greate riches. And wheras *Pedro de Candia* hauyng taken the iourney, could not bryng his desire to passe, by meane that the waie was so asperous and troublesome, he retourned againe toward *COLLAO*, with a Mutinie kindled among his menne, because one whose name was *Mesa*, who had been Captaine of the Artillerie of the Marques, had said that in despite of *Hernando Pizarro*, he would passe through the Prouince of *COLLAO*. But these wordes he spake by meane of the sauour and countenance of those which had serued *Don Diego*, who were there present in the companie because thei

beeing ouercome in the late battaile: yet their greefe remained still in mynde. Whereupon *Pedro de Candia* sent the same *Mesa* prisoner with the processe and prouaunces whiche were made againt hym, to *Hernando Pizarro*. Who vnderstandyng that whylest *Don Diego de Almagro* liued, the Countrey should neuer bee in quiet, nor the people pacified, also as well in the proces of *Mesa* as others, which *Hernando Pizarro* had made, he found mutynies in many places, and persones coniured to that entent, whiche was to haue *Don Diego* out of prison, and by that meanes to vsurpe the Citie. The promises consulted, he thought conuenient to kill *Don Diego de Almagro* iustifyng his death with all his offences, which he had committed in the broyles and alterations past, alledgyng that onely he had been the vrger and onely cause of the saied facte: and likewise how he was the first that brought men of warre into the Citie, and occupied the same by his owne authoritie. And moreouer, had slaine many that resisted hym, and likewise had come with an armie and Ensignes spred into the prouince of CHINCHA, which was manifestly knowen to be of the Marques gouernment. For which causes and considerations, he gaue sentence of death against him. But when *Don Diego de Almagro* heard the sentence of death pronounced, he made piteous moue, and spake many doleful and sorrowfull wordes to *Hernando Pizarro*, laiying to his charge, how he was the onely cause that his brother and he were come to be exalted, and brought vnto the estate wherein thei now remaine: And had furnished them with money at the beginnyng, wishyng that he would remember how when he had hym prisoner

in his power, he set hym freely at libertie without any ransome, refusing the counsell of his captaines who perswaded him to put hym to death. And if he had receiued any discourtesie in the time of his imprisonment, yet that he would consider that he neither commaunded it, nor was priuie there vnto. Likewise he besought him to consider, that now he was very old, and although at that instant he would remit his death: his age and time according to the course of Nature, would shortly make an ende of his daies.

Vnto whom *Hernando Pizarro* made answer, sayyng: that his wordes did not become a personage of so great a minde and courage as he was of to speake: nor yet in suche a case to shewe himself so fraile and fearfull of death, and sith his Iudgement could not be reuoked: he ought to confirme himself with the will of God, like a Christian and a gentleman. Vnto whiche words *Don Diego* made answer, sayyng: sir maruell you not that I as a fraile man and a sinner dooe feare death, for the humanitie of Christ did feelee the same feare. But in conclusion *Hernando Pizarro* in execution of his sentence, caused his throte to be cut: and when he had so doen, he went to the *COLLAO* against the companie of Captain *Candia*, where he commaunded *Mesa*, who was the author of the Mutinie to be executed, and the same 300. men that *Candia* had, he deliuered to *Pedro Ansuarez*, whom he had sent vnto a new discouerie: where thei thought al to haue perished with hunger, through the great marishes and euil waie that thei passed and in the meane while he abode conquering the countrey of *COLLAO*, whiche is a plaine Countrey, and hath many



golde Mines, and by reason of the Cold, the graine MAIZ groweth not there.

The Indians of this Prouince eateth certaine Rootes called PAPAS, whiche are verie like bothe in makyng and taste Turnepes: There are great store of cattaile, and cheefly the shepe which haue been spoken of. And when *Hernando Pizarro* had vnderstanding how the Marques his brother was come to Cusco, he left all his businesse and came to visite him, leauing in his place to go forward with the Conquest, his brother *Gonsalo Pizarro*, who proceeded in that discouerie vntil the Prouince of CHARCAS, where he was enuironed with many Indian warriers which bent their force vpon him, and draue him to suche extremitie: that his brother *Hernando Pizarro*, hearyng of suche danger that he was in, was forced to goe from Cusco with many horsmen to succour hym.

And because the aide should come vnto him the sooner, the Marques caused to be blowen abroad, that he in person would follow with al his power: and to giue the better countenance to the matter, hee went two or three dayes iorney out of the Citie. When *Hernando Pizarro* was come where his brother *Gonsalo* was, he found that the Indians were put to flight, so that certaine dayes they kept both company togeather, in the conquest where they had many incounters with those Indians vntil they had taken *Tiso*, their Captaine, prisoner, and then with victory they returned to Cusco, where the Marques receaued them with great honor, and gaue lyuinges in that countrey to as many as he (possible) might, and the residew he sent to other Conquests, with

the other Captaine, *Vergara*, and *Porcell*, and by another way he sent Captain *Alonso Marcadillio*, and Captaine *Juan Perez de Gueuara*, and the Campe Maister, *Pedro de Valdiuia*, he sent to CHILI, from whence *Don Diego de Almagro* came, when he returned to Cusco. All those things being doone, *Hernando Pizarro* tooke his way toward Spayne, to make relation to the Emperour, of the proceedings in PERU, although many of his freends perswaded him rather to abide, for (quoth they) it is doubtful how his Maiestie wil take the death of *Don Diego de Almagro*. The Marques also counsailed him to beware, and not trust any of the freends of *Don Diego*, which commonly were called the men of CHILI, and not to permit them to councell, and gather togeather yea, and if at anytime he should see aboue sixe of them togeather, that then he might be assured that some conspiracy was in hand.

¶ VVhat happened to Captayne Valdiuia, in his voyage,  
to the Prouince of *Chili*. Chap. 13.

**P***edro de Valdiuia*, with his company, came to the Prouince of CHILI, wher the Indians receiued him with fained peace and freendship, because their haruest was at hand, and not as yet fully rype: but after their corne was had into their Garnets, they made a generall insurrection, and sodainly came vpon the Spanyardes, who went wandring carelesse abroad in the Feeldes, and slue fourteene of them. *Valdiuia* hearing of the daunger which his men were in, he made all haste possible to

succour them : and beeinge occupied in the ayde of his company, there were certaine Spanyardes that had conspired against him : but when the parties were knowen, and the case euidently to bee approued, hee forthwith commaunded the conspirators to be hanged, among who was Captaine *Pedro Sancho de Hoz*, who hee esteemed as his companion, on that Iorney.

Whilest he was executing of Iustice in the feeld, there came aboue 7000. Indians vpon the cittie, who put the few Spanyards which had the gard of the cittie in great extremitie, amonge whom were Captaines, *Francisca de Vallegran*, and *Alonso de Monroy* with onely thirtie horsemen, who came out of the Cittie into the Feelde, where they fought like valyaunt men of War, with the Indian Archers, from the morninge, till the night compelled them to rest, of which skirmish, they were al both wounded and wearied : The Indians also were as glad of the retire, through the slaughter and damage which that day they had receaued. So that from that day forward, all the countrey was on an vproare, and prepared for the Warres, and so continued for the space of eyght yeares, all the which time, *Valdiuia* and his men resisted their fury, and neuer left the countrey, but rather caused his souldiers to plough and soe the ground, and gather the corne to maintayne them, without any ayde of the Indian helpe, and so continued vntill hee returned to *PERU*, which was at the time when the lycenciat *De la Gasca* was preparinge an Armye against *Gonsalo Pizarro*, in all the which warres hee serued, as hereafter shalbe declared.

# THE FOVRTH BOOKE,

*treateth of the voyage and discoverye  
made by Gonsalo Pisarro, of the Prouince of  
Zinamon, and of the death of the Lord Mar-  
ques Pisarro.*

¶ How *Gonsalo Pisarro* prepared him selfe for the Iorney  
of *Zinamon*. Chap. 1.

AFTER that knowledge was had in Peru, how within the precincts of the dominion of *Quirto* Eastward, was discovered a rich country, where abundance of *Zinamon* did grow: By reason whereof vulgarly that Country or Prouince was called the land of *Zinamon*. Whereupon the Marques determined, and also tooke in hand to conquer and inhabit that Country: so that for the same purpose he chose his brother *Gonsalo Pisarro*, with intent that alwayes from *Quirto* that voyage should be furnished with all necessaries. And in accomplishment of his pretended purpose, he made assignation of the government of *Quirto* to his sayd brother *Gonsalo*, in the hope that the Emperour his Maiestie would confirme the same. This don, *Gonsalo Pisarro* tooke his way toward this discovery, with a reasonable number of men.

In the way as he went, he was forced often times to fight with the Indians of the Prouince of *Guanuco*, who draue him to such extremitie, that he was compelled to write to the Marques for succoure, who sent vnto him

## The Discouery and Conquest of *Peru*. 151

*Francisco de Chaues*, and after al those broyles were past, he came to QUITO.

In the meane while, the Marques sent *Gomes de Aluarado*, to conquere and inhabite the Prouince of GUANUCO, because he was informed how certain Cascikes had conspired, and with a great number of Indians were gone to the siege of the citie of TRUGILLIO, who also slew as many Spanyards as they met withall: Robbing and spoyling likewise the poore Indians which were Comarcans to the citie, and all the spoyle and carkases of the dead, they offered to an idole which they carryed with them, called CARAQUILLA: And in this order proceeded on their iorney, vntil *Mighel de Lacerna* issued out of the Citie with as many Citizens as he could gather together: Who ioyning with *Francisco de Caues*, fought with the enemie, and obtayned victorie.

¶ How *Gonsalo Pizarro* departed from Quito, and came to the Countrey of Zinamon, and what hapned to him on his way. Chap. 2.

**G**onsalo Pizarro hauing prepared all necessaries for his determined vyage, hee departed from QUITO, hauing in his company 200. Spaniards wel trimmed in all poynts, of the which number was one hundred horsemen, and aboue 4000. Indian frends, with 3000. sheepe and hogs. After he was passed a towne called INGA, he came into the countrey of the people called QUIXOS, which is the farthest Countrey that INGA GUAYNACAUA

An Earth-  
quake.

conquered toward the North, where as those Indians made a countenance of warre. But in one night they vanished all away, so that one of them coulde not be taken. After a while that hee had abode with his Armie in the townes and dwellinges of those Indians, refreshing them selues, there happened a maruailous great Earthquake, with rayne and tempest of Lightning and Thunder, and the ground oppened in many places, and swallowed vp more then 500. houses : yea, a riuer which was not farre from them, did so much increase, that it was not possible for them to pase ouer to seeke victuals : by mean wherof, they were driuen to great penury and hunger.

Volcan.

After he departed from these Indian dwellings, they came to a row of high hilles, which of force they should passe : The extreme colde on the top of those hilles was exceeding great, in such sort that many of their Indian frendes were frozen to death : and because that wilderness of mountaines was without any succour of victuals, they were compelled to proceede forward, till they came to a Prouince called SUMACO, which standeth at the foote of a high VOLCAN, and finding there sufficient prouision of victuals, the army abode there whilst *Gonsalo Pizarro*, with some of those countrey men, entred againe into the mountaines, to seeke a conuenient way for his army to passe, and finding none, he came to a towne called Coca, and from thence he sent for his company which abode at *Sumaco*, and for the space of two moneths that he abode there, it neuer ceased rayning neither day nor night, yea in all that space, there was not so much drye wether that they might drie the wet clothes which they

ware on their backes, So that in this Prouince of SUMACO, and 50. leagues in circuite, groweth the Zinamon wherof <sup>Zinamon</sup> they had notice, which are great trees with leues like vnto Bay trees, and the fruite of these trees is like vnto clusters of small frutt which groweth round like an egge, and although the fruit, leues, barke, and rootes of those trees haue the fauour, odor, and substance of Zinamon, yet the most profite is, where the fruit groweth like vnto a great acorne, and although in all this countrey are many of these wilde trees, which fructifie and growe without any labor of mans hand.

The Indians haue of the same kinde many trees in their tillage ground, which they trimme and keepe with labor and payne, and those trees produce finer Zinamon a great deale, which they esteeme in much, because they batter with it in other Cornarcan Prouinces, for victualles, cloth, and all other necessities which are needefull for their sustenance.

¶ Of the Countrey and Townes, that *Gonsalo Pizarro* passed, vntil hee came to a Land where hee built a Vergantine. Chap. 3.

WHILEST *Gonsalo Pizarro* abode in SUNNACO, the greatest number of his men that were whole, and sound of body, went before to discouer the way, according as the Indians gaue them instructions, yea, and oftentimes they ledde them out of the way, euen as the inhabitants of SUMACO had doone, onely for to expell them out of their countrey, and their decite was, they

taught them a way sayinge : follow ye this pathe, which will bring you to a countrey, ful of townes and villages, replenished with aboundance of victuals : but this aduice was found to be false, for they found the same countrey, which they so highly commended, to be barren, vnhabited, and absolutely without any succour, vntill they came to the village of COCA, which standeth neare vnto a great riuer, where *Gonsalo Pizarro* had been, before his comming to SUMACO, and there rested for the space of fīue weekes, abiding the comminge of his companion : the Lorde of that place submitted him selfe to his freendship : from thence they trauailed all together along that riuer side, downwads, vntil they found a narrow gloze, where they made a Bridge to passe ouer, although the water was of 200. fadom deepe, and had a mighty great fall downewarde, which fall made a maruailous strange noyse, which sounded and was heard more then fīue leagues from the place : certaine daies from the passage, they found that the riuer ran circuite, so that they came to a narrow place that was litle more then 20. foote brode, where also was another like fall, and ech side garnished with hard Rocke, so that for the space of 50. leagues, they found no conuenient passage, but at this place were a number of Indians, attended their comming to resist them. But yet the Hargubusiers made the passage cleare, and forced the Indians to giue place : in the meane while they made a bridge of timber, and passed ouer all the army in safetie. In this forme they iorneyed through a great wildernes of Mountaine, vntil they came to the Countrey called GUEMA, which was some what plaine, but replenished with many bogs



and brookes : in which place they were driuen to great extremity of victuals, and through want, were forced to liue with siluester fruits, vntil they came to another cuntry, where they found some succor of food, and the soyle indifferently inhabited : these people were cloathed in garments made of cotten wool, but in al other countreys which they had trauailed, the people went naked, which was either through the great heat which they haue continually, or els through pouerty, as they haue not wherewith to buy apparel : they also vsed the forepart of their priuy members, to be tied with a string of cotten wool betwixt their legs, and made fast at their girdling : and the wemen hadd certain rags to couer their secrets, but no other kinde of clothing.

In this place *Gonsalo Pizarro* commaunded a certayne vessel, called a Vergantine to be made, for to carry their fardage, and other necessities downe the riuer, and likewise their sicke men, and also for his owne person, because that in some places the cuntry was so full of bogs, that they could not iorney. <sup>The building of a Vergantine.</sup> The buildinge of the Vergantine was very troublesome, for they were forced to make a Forge for their Iron worke, in the which they also profited with the horseshooes of the dead horses, for want of other iron : they made also coles to serue the turne. In these workes *Gonsalo Pizarro* permitted none of his company to bee vnoccupied, from the eldest to the yongest, and he himselfe the first at al assaults, as wel with the axe as with the hammer : in steed of pitch, they vsed the gum which distilled from certaine trees, and <sup>A shifte.</sup> instead of Aucom, they tooke old Mantels of the Indians, and some of the Spanyards shirts which were rotten

through the great wet which they had pased, so that euery one was contributar with such things as he might spare. In this order the vessell was finished and launched into the riuier, and al their fardage laden, they made also certain Canoas, to go in company with the Vergantine.

¶ How *Francisco de Alerano*, fled with the Vergantine, and into what misery they were driuen by want thereof. Chap. 4.

WHEN *Gonsalo Pizarro* had finished the Vergantine, he thought that all his trouble was at an end, and with this new vessel to discouer all the land, whereupon he continued his iorney, and all the force of his armie, traauyled by land through the bogs: Keeping along the ryuer side, in which way they passed through many deserts of mountaines, and Cane fieldes, making their way by force of hand with their swoordes, hatchets, and axes, and when they might not pas on the one side of the Riuer, the Vergantine caryed them ouer to the other side, so that alwayes at night the Landmen, and watermen lodged together.

When *Gonsalo Pizarro* considered how they had traauiled aboue 200. leagues downe along the riuier, and found no prouision of victual, but only siluester fruites, and some rootes, he commaunded one of his Captaines called *Francisco de Orellana* that with 50. men he should goe before to discouer the Riuer, and to seeke victuals, with commission that if he should happen to finde any,

that then he should therewith load the Vergantine leauinge the fardage which was aboorde at the meeting of two great Riuers, of which he had vnderstandinge to bee of 80. leagues distant, and also that he should leaue two Canoas at certaine Riuers which crossed ouer, to the intent that with them he migh passe his men ouer. When *Orellana* had taken his leaue, he departed, shortly after found the currant of such force, that in short time hee came to the meetinge of the two great Riuers, without finding any kinde of sustenance: and also considering what way he had made in three daies, he found that in a whole yare it was not possible to returne that way agayne, by reason of the vehemency of the great currant, whereupon he determined to proceede down the riuer, euen whither fortune should lead him, although he iudged it a thing more conuenient to abide there, yet not withstanding, he proceeded on, and toke likewise the CANAOS with him, although some of his company required him to abide their generals order and coming, especially Father *Gaspar de Carauajall*, who was their preacher, and because he insisted more then the residue, the Captaines vsed him very discourteously, as wel in word as deede, and with wil or nil, he proceeded on his enterprise, making some entries into the land, where he fought with such Indians as would haue resisted him: and many times they came to encounter with him in the Riuer with their CANOAS, with whom they could not fight at will, because the Vergantine was so full of men, that one disturbed another.

In a certaine countrey where he found place con- <sup>Another</sup>uenient, he abode and buylt another Vergantine: For <sup>Vergantine.</sup>

the Indians of this soile came and submitted themselves vnto him, and also prouided him both of victuals and al other things necessary : in another prouince forward, he fought with the Indians and obtained victory against them, of whom he had intelligence, that certaine iorneyes from thence, within the mayne, was a countrey in the which dwelt none but wemen, who were valiant, and defended themselves against their Comarcans. With this aduertisement he proceeded on his way, without finding in all his iorney, either gold or plate, and ceased not till he came out into the Northern sea, being 325. leagues distant from the Iland of CUBAGUA : This Riuer is called MERANION, because the Captaine which discovered this nauigation, was called *Maranion*. The beginning or headspring of this Riuer, commeth from PERU, out of the side of the mountaines of QUITO. It runneth by direct course (accounting by the rule of altitude of the sun) 700. Leagues, and with the crookednes and compasse which the same Riuer maketh in many places from his origen, vntill it commeth into the mayne Sea, containeth 1800. leagues, and the mouth of the same riuer is fiftene leagues brode, and further inward it waneth three, yea and foure leagues broder.

Note.

Maranion.

When *Orellana* was commen out of the Riuer of MARANION, he tooke his way toward CASTILE, where he enformed his Maiestie of his discoverie, and also how he had finished the same at his owne cost and charge. And more ouer in his said discoverie, was a countrey exceedinge ritche, in the which liued none but Wemen : which countrey commonly was called the conquest of the AMAZONES : Beseeching his Maiestie to graunt vnto him

the gouvernement and discovery of the said country : the which his request accordingly was graunted vnto him. Whereupon he gathered together the number of five hundred men, among whiche were many Gentlemen, and men of greate credit, with whom he tooke Shippyng in SAINT LUCAR DE BARRAMEDA, and after he was comen to the Altitude of the CANARIA Ilandes, the winde was contrarie for his Nauigation : and also driuen to want of vituales, whervpon the fleete was seperated, one shippe cleane without sight of the other, and he himself died on the way, in sutch sorte, that his companie were scattered among the Ilandes.

Of all the whiche his proceedynges, *Gonsalo Pizarro* made great complaynt, principally for so trecherous a parte, as was to leaue him in such necessitie and want of victuall, and likewise, without any succour or helpe to passe his men ouer the Riuers : And also, because hee had deceaued him of a great summe of Golde, Plate, and Emraldes, which was aboorde of his Vergantine, with the whiche he had sufficient to finish bothe shipping, and all other furniture, necessarie for the discovery, whiche the Emperour had graunted vnto him, though his deceitfull practise.

¶ How *Gonsalo Pizarro* returned to *Quito*, and of the great paines and miseries, which he passed in the returne. Chap. 5.

WHEN *Gonsalo Pizarro* was come to the place where he commanded *Orellana* to leaue the CANOAS for his commynge, for to passe certaine Riuers : By meane

whereof he was driuen to great extremitie : and forced to make *Raffes*, and *CANOAS* for that purpose. And when he was come to the meeting of the two Riuers, where he appoynted *Orellana* to attende his commyng, and finding him not : yet there he had vnderstandyng of a Spaniard which *Orellana* had left on shore behinde him, because he stood against his pretended voyage : and *Orellana* also intending to take this new discouery in hand in his owne name, and not as Lieutenant to *Gonsalo Pizarro* wher vpon he desisted from thaucthorie receiued of *Pizarro*, and compelled his company to elct him for their captain and general.

Now *Gonsalo Pizarro*, beyng left succourlesse and voyde of help for his Nauigation, and the only way to prouide sustenance for his armie, yet he found somewhat amonge the Indians for barter of small bels and glasses : notwithstanding his greefe and heauinesse was not small, wher vpon he determined to returne backe agayne to *Qurro*, from whence he had trauailed more than 400. leagues of most euill way, among Mountaynes, and country vnhabited : the which when he had discouered, hee wondered at his owne trauayles, which he had passed, and escaped the cruel death of hunger in the wildernes of Mountaynes, wher 40. of his men ended their daies, without any hope of succour but euen as they axed for meate, lening to trees, they fel downe dead with very hunger. But now committing him self to God hee returned by another way, leauing the way that he came, which was not only troublesome to passe, but also voyde of al kinde of sustenance, and so al aduentures sought another way, which was as euill and rather worse then

the way which they had comen, in the which they had much to do to sustaine life, although they killed their horses which were left, and greyhounds, with other sort of dogs to eate : the extremitie of hunger was such, that a cat or a hen, was worth fiftie poyzes, which is starling neare twenty pound, and one of those poysoned foules called *ALCATRAX*, was worth ten poyzes. Great  
hunger.

In this manner *Gonsalo Pizarro* continued on his way toward *Quito*, where as longe before hee gaue aduice of his returne, whereupon the Cittizens of *Quito* prouided great aboundance of hogs, and sheepe, and came out of the citie to meete him on his way : they caryed also with them some horses and apparrel, for *Gonsalo Pizarro*, and his Captaines, the which succor came vnto him, being 50. leagues from *Quito*, who comming vnto him with such prouision, God he knoweth, how ioyfully it was accepted, but cheefely the victuals : *Gonsalo Pizarro* and his company, were almost naked, for long sithence with the great waters of rayne, and otherwise, their clothes were rotted from their bodies, so that now, each of them had but only two small Deare skins, which couered their fore parts, and also their hinder partes : some had lefte olde rotten breeches, and shooes made of raw deare skins : their swords wanted scabards and were spoyled with rust, they came all on foote, their armes and legs, were scratched with shrubs and bryers, their iestures seemed like vnto dead men, so that scarcely their freends and olde acquaintance knew them : In which painefull Iorney, in more then 200. leagues, they could finde no salte, which they found to bee a great want vnto them. But when they were come into the countrey of *Quito*,

and had receaued that freendly succour, they fel on their knees, and kissed the ground, yeeldinge vnto God moste humble and hartly thanks, who had deliuered them from so many perrils and daungers.

Their exceeding hunger was so great, that they began to feede like raueninge woolfes, so that it was thought conuenient for their health to taxe their meat, with moderate diet, vntil by little and litle, their stomackes were comforted, and strengthened for disgesture.

When *Gonsalo Pizarro* saw that the horses and apparrell which was brought would but only furnish him and his Captaines, neither hee nor they would not take any parte thereof, nor yet change their olde ragges, which they had on their backes, to obserue the rule of equitie, like good souldiers : so that in this forme and attire, hee with his company, entered into the City of *QUITO*, in a morninge, and wente directly to the Temple, to render vnto God most humble laude and praise, who of his infinite goodnes had deliuered them out of so many perrils and daungers : and after their prayses giuen, each one attired him selfe according to his possibilitie.

This countrey where the *Zinamon* groweth, standeth vnder the Equinoctiall Lyne, euen as the Ilandes of *MALUCO* doth, which also bringeth forth *Zinamon*, which ordinarily is spent in *Spayne*, and in other orientall partes.



¶ How the inhabitantes of *Chili* began to conspire  
the Marques death. Chap. 6.

WHEN *Hernando Pizarro* executed *Don Diego de Almagro* in the citie of *Cusco*, hee sent a Sonne of his, which he had begotten of an Indian woman, to the Cittie of the Kings, whose name was also *Don Diego de Almagro*, who was a vertuous younge man of great courage, and well brought vp: his cheefe exercise was to ride a horse well, both after the Genet vse, and warlike order, in the which facultie hee proued a gallaunt Horsman: he could also write and reade exceeding well: his Schoolmayster and Tutor, was a Gentleman called *Iuan de Herrada*, who had likewise the gouernment of his person. The Father of this young man commended his Sonne vnto this man; Now when he was in the Citie of the Kinges, with his Pupill, hee vsed great conuersation with such as he thought meete to bee of his parcialitie, who were such as went wandring vp and downe in the Countrey, without a guide, as men left succourlesse, and ouercome, and none woulde entertaine them because they were with *Don Diego de Almagro* at the time of his ouerthrow.

Now *Iuan de Herrada* callinge to remembrance, how *Hernando Pizarro* was gone into Spayne, and his brother *Gonsalo* likewise gone into the countrey of *Zinamon*, in discouery, and hee also beeing set at libertie by the Marques, for vntill this time, hee was a Prisoner. So that now the younge man and his Tutor, began to prepare armour and other funiture of War, in a readines, meaning to reuenge his Fathers death, and the destruc-

tion which was made in his Fathers armie : the remembrance whereof often times procured to haue them for his faithfull freends : but yet he could neuer bring his desire to effect : whereupon hee tooke occasion to take from them certaine Indians of seruice, thinking by that meane they should not haue wherewithall to maintaine such as daily came vnto them : but his pretence auayled not, for they were so knitte together in league of freendship, that all which they possessed, was a thing common among them, and that which was gotten by play, or stealth, they brought to *Iuan de Herrada*, his House, as a common stocke to maintayne him withall : so that dailye they multiplyed, and furnished them selues with Armour : yet not withstandinge, there were many of the Marques freendes, that gaue him warninge of their dooinge.

But hee not regarding their counsayle, beeing a man of a gentle nature and condition, answered them, saying : that they should not encrease the sorrowe of the ouerthrowen men. Alas (quoth he) their greefe is great ynough, to see themselues poore, ouercomen, and almost of all men abhorred.

*Don Diego de Almagro*, and his companye, beeinge assured of the playne meaninge of the Marques, they became euery daye more shamelesse then other : yea, they letted not the cheefest of them, to passe by the Marques in the streate, without any submission or reuerence dooinge vnto him : and also on a night they had tyed three Halters on the Picot, which is a Piller, whereon they vse to doo execution of hanginge, in the Market place of euery cittie.

The one of those Halters was set towarde the Marques house, and another towarde the house of his Liutenant, and the thirde toward the house of his Secretary.

Yet the Marques dissimuled all these dooinges, excusinge them as men ouercome, and without shame, and therefore they vsed such practises.

But these long sufferings, made them a great deale the bolder: so that from two hundred leagues distante, came diuerse of the parcialtie which were tofore banished, amonge whom they absolutely conspired the Marques death, and to be Lorde of the Lande, as afterward followed. Yet they stayed somewhat longer in the execution of their determination, onely to heare some newes, because they had vnderstanding that Captaine *Diego de Aluarado*, was gone into Spayne, to accuse *Hernando Pizarro*, of his former proceedinges, and how *Hernando* was for his defence apprehended, and the cause earnestly followed: they had also intelligence, how his Maiestie had prouided the Lycenciat *Vaca de Castro*, to come vnto PERU, to make informacion of all the former successe, but not to punishe the offences with such rygor as they expected. Whereupon leauing all delaies aside, they forthwith determined to execute their intended purpose, although they had a great desire to se what *Vaca de Castro* would do, saying: that if this new Iudge do not as soone as hee commeth, apprehand and put to death the Marques, that then they would murther them bothe together: and for to haue more assured aduertisement, they sent *Don Alonso de Monte Mayor* towarde TUMBEZ, and others in his companie. Because there were certayn shippes arriued, which came

from PANAMA, who brought newes, how *Vaca de Castro* was preparing his viage into PERU. Afterwarde it happened, that when *Vaca de Castro* had inbarked him selfe in Panama: the currant of the sea beeing contrary, draue him in such sorte to Leeward, that he was forced to come on lande at the Ilande of GORGONA, and to passe vp the Riuer of SAINT IHON, and by good happe came into the gouernacion of *Benalcasar*, and from thence passed by lande into PERU, as hereafter more particular shalbe declared.

The men of CHILI seeyng the delay in the comyng of *Vaca de Castro*, they suspected that by their owne delay of their pretence, intelligence might be geuen to him of their doynge, and thereby bee an occasion of the losinge of all their liues. So that they now were agreed to execute theyr intenete, as in this chapter folowinge shalbe declared.

¶ How the Marques his friendes gaue him a speciall warnyng of the order of the conspiracie of his death. Chap. 7.

IT was openly knowen in the Cittie of the Kinges, how the men of CHILI had conspyred the Marques his death, and many of his freends giuing him warning thereof: vnto whome he made aunswere, saying, that their heads should keepe his: so that in fime he was carelesse of his enimies, in such wise that oftentymes he would goe out of the Cittie, to certayne Milles that he had a making, with only his Lacky to attend vpon him. And to such as demaunded of him, why he had not a

Garde to wayte vpon him : he would say, that he would not that men should thinke, that he stooode in feare of the Lycenciate *Vaca de Castro*, who was comming for to be Iudge against him.

Whereupon the men of *CHILI*, blewe abroad that *Vaca de Castro* was dead, seeing that the Marquesse stood in such securitie of him selfe. So that on a daye *Iuan de Herrada* went to visite him at his house, with certayne of his parcialities, and founde him in his Garden : where after certayne wordes, he demaunded why his Lordshippe would consent to kyl him and his fellowes ?

The MARQUESSE aunswered with a great oathe, that he neuer had any such intencion. But rather (quoth he) it is tolde mee, that you and your freends goe about to murder mee, and for that purpose ye prouide dayly Armour and Municion. Vnto whome *Iuan de Herrada* made answer saying : Syr sith your Honour dooth prouide Launces, it is no meruayle though we buie Corselettes to defend vs : he was so bolde to speake so presumptuously, because he had neere at hand in Ambushe, aboue fortie armed men. Furthermore he sayde, that because his Honour should put away his suspicion, that it might please him to graunt lycence to him, and *Don Diego de Almagro* and his men, to depart out of the Countrey.

The Lorde Marquesse hauing conceyued no suspicion by his Wordes, dyd rather pittie them, and assured them with amorous wordes, saying : that he had not bought Launces to contend with them. He had no sooner spoken these wordes, when he went to an Orenge tree, and gathered certaine Orenge, which there were

highly esteemed, because they were the first that grewe in that Countrey, and gaue them to *Iuan de Herrada*, saying in his eare, that if he stode in neede of any thing, that he should tell him, and he would prouide him according to his desire: for the which his gentle offer *Iuan de Herrada* kyssed his honours handes.

And leauing the MARQUESSE with this securitie, he tooke his leaue, and went home to his house: where he with the principallest of his parciallitie agreed, that the next Sunday following they should make an ende of the MARQUESSE dayes, sithens they had letten the matter slippe, which should haue been done on Saint *Ihon BAPTIST* day, past. It happened that on the Saturday, one of the conspirators, opened the matter in confession to the Curate of the Church, who the same night aduised *Antonio Picado*, Secretarie to the MARQUESSE beseeching him to bring him to his Lordes presence: Whereupon the Secretarie went with him to the house of *Francisco Martin*, brother to the MARQUESSE, where he was at supper with his Children, and incontinent arose from the Table, and came to the Curate, who enformed him of the trueth of the conspiracie, at whose wordes the MARQUESSE was not a lyttle amased: and within a lyttle whyle, he sayde to his Secretarie, that he beleeued not the Curates aduise, because (sayde he) it is not long agoe, sith *Iuan de Herrada*, came vnto me with great humilitie, and that the partie which had opened his minde to the Curate in confession, should seeme by that practice to craue somewhat of him, and to haue him morebound to gratifie him, he had deuised that pollicie. But not withstanding, he sent for Doctor *Iuan Velasques*, his Lieu-

tenant, who being euyll at ease could not come. So that the MARQUESSE went vnto him the same night home to his house, hauing in his company onely his Secretarie, with other two or three personnes, and a Lynck caried before him, and finding his Lieutenant in his bed: he tolde him the cause of his comming. Who hauing heard all the matter, made lyght of it, wylling his Lordshippe not to feare: for as long (quoth he) as I haue this white wande of Iustice in my hande: there is none in all this Lande that dareth to styrrer or make an vprore. In which his saying it fell so out, that he kept promise, for afterwarde as he was running away, as hereafter shall be declared, at the tyme when they were kylling the Marquesse: he fled out at a window, and descending downe the side of a wall, he caried the rod of Iustice in his mouth.

¶ Of the death of the Lorde Marquesse, Don Francisco  
Pisarro. Chap. 8.

W<sup>I</sup>th all those fayre words and assurances, the MARQUESSE was so troubled in minde, that the next day beeing Sunday, he would not goe to the Cathedrall Church, as he was accustomed: but rather had deuine Seruice sayd in his house, and meant not to go abroade till he had prouided for his security. When Seruice was ended in the Parrishe Church: the Doctor *Iuan Velasques*, and Captaine *Francisco de Chaues*, who at that instant was the cheefest person in the Lande, next vnto the Marquesse, came together, accompanied with

many others, to the Lord MARQUESSE his house, and after they visitation was made, the most of the Cittizens returned home to theyr houses. And the Doctor, and *Francisco de Chaues*, abode dinner with the MARQUESSE : And after they had dyned, which might be between the houres of Twelue and one of the day, thinking that all the people of the Cittie were, according to the cutome of the Countrey, taking theyre rest, and the MARQUESSE seruauents also at dinner, *Iuan de Herrada* with other twelue companions, came from his house which standeth three hundreth paces distant from the MARQUESSE house, through the open streetes, with theyr swords ready drawne in theyr hands, crying with a loude voice, saying : Let the Tyrant traytor die, who hath commaunded the Iudge to be slaine, which the King our Maister sent into the land. The cause which they helde, not to goe in secrete wise, but rather with all the noyse possible, that the Cittizens should imagine theyr number to be great, considering that they durst attempt such a maighty matter so publicuely, and also at such an houre, that although they should come with all speade to the sacker, yet they should come too late, or else them selues to be slaine.

In this forme they came to the MARQUESSE house, leauing one at his gate, with a drawne sworde in his hande, which was bloodied with the blood of a Ram : who cryed with aloude voice, dead is the Tyrant, dead is the Tyrant. The which his proclamation, was the cause that many of the Cittizens which were comming to the rescue, returned home to theyr houses againe, beleeuing that the thing was true, which that one man had spoken.



Whereupon *Iuan de Herrada* proceeded vp a payre of stayres with his men, in the meane whyle, the MARQUESSE was aduised by certaine INDIANS which stood at his chamber doore, and there vpon he commaunded *Francisco de Chaues*, that whilest he went in, to arme him selfe, to keep the Hall doore : who was so sore troubled in minde, that he forgot the shutting of doores, and went down the stayres, to know what the matter was, and suddenly one of the conspirators thrust him through with his sword : who seeing him self mortally wounded, drew his sword, saying, what haue ye no regard to your freendes. But the stripes came so thick vpon him, that he was soone despatched, and leauing him there dead, they ran like desperate men into the MARQUESSE Hall, where were in number xij. SPANIARDS of the MARQUESSE freends, who fled, leaping out at the windowes, among whom was doctor *Velasques* his Liutenant, with his white rod of Iustice in his mouth, according to his promise, for because both his hands were needful to help him down the wall. The Lord MARQUESSE beeing in his bed chamber, and his brother *Francisco Martin*, helping to arme him, with two Gentlemen and two Pages, the one was called *Iuan de Vargas*, who was sonne to *Gomes de Tardoya*, and the other was named *Escandon*, who seeing the enemie so nigh, that they had not tyme to arme they Maister : the Marquesse took his sworde and Target (which is a sheelde of leather) in hande, and came to his Chamber doore ; where he and his folke valiauntly defended them selues a good space, and fought so manfully, that the enemies could not enter, saying with a loude voice, Oh brother, vpon them, vpon them,

The Cruell  
death of the  
Marquesse.

let them dye like Traytors as they are. But the men of CHILI fought so long, that they slew *Francisco Martin*, in whose place entered one of the Pages: The CHILI men seeing them defend them selues so long, and fearing that succour might come, and assault them on theyr backes: they determined to put the matter in hazarde, so that they took one of theyr owne company, and thrust him in at the doore with force of hande, being well armed: and whylst the MARQUESSE was occupied in killing of him, the residue had tyme to enter the Chamber doore, and they all with one accord stroke at the MARQUESSE, who fought so long with them that with verie wearinesse, his sworde fell out of his hands, and then they slew him with a pricke of a Rapyer through his throte: and when he was fallen to the ground, and his winde fayling him, he cryed vnto God for mercie, and when he had so done, he made a crosse on the ground and kissed it, and then incontinent yeelded vp the Ghost: and when he was fully dead, they slew also his two Pages; And on the CHILI side were foure slaine and diuers other wounded.

When this sorrowfull newes was knowne in the Cittie, there came aboue two hundred men to ayde *Don Diego de Almagro*, for though they were armed and in a readinesse, yet they durst not come abroade, tyll they perfectly knew how the matter would passe. But now they ran vp and downe the Cittie, taking the Armor, from such as were comming to succour the MARQUESSE. When the murderers came out of the MARQUESSE house, with theyr blooddye swordes in theyre handes: they forthwith caused *Don Diego* to mount vpon his Horse,

and to passe through the cheefest streetes of the Cittie, saying : that in all PERU there was no other Gouvernour, but onely he, nor yet any King aboue him. And when this was done, he sackt the MARQUESSE house, and also the houses of his Brother and his Secretarie. And then he compelled the Councill and State of the Cittie to receyue *Don Diego* for theyr gouvernour, vnder the collour of the Capitulation, which was tofore made with his Maiestie at the beginning of the discoverie, which in effect was. That *Don Diego de Almagro*, should haue the gouernment of newe TOLDEO, and after his decease, his sonne, or whome he should appoint to enioy the same. When all this dilligence was done, they commaunded to be slaine certayne Vassailes, which were knowne to be seruauants and freends of the MARQUESSE.

It was a sorrowfull spectacle to behold and heare, the Wiues of dead men, what dolefull cries they made, yea, and the lamentable words that they spake. The corpse of the Lord MARQUESSE, certaine NEGROS drew a long the streetes toward the Church, and none durst burie him, vntyll *Iuan de Barbaran*, Cittizen of TRUGILLIO, who somtyme had been seruant to the MARQUESSE, he and his Wife buried bothe the MARQUESSE and his Brother, as well as they might, hauing first obtained licence for that fact of *Don Diego* : they made all the haste possible to burie him, and yet they had not leysure to attyre him according to the vsuall ceremony of Knights, of the order of *S. Iames*, because they were adised how the men of CHILI were comming to cutte off the Marquesse head, for to put it on the Picot, which is a Gallowes after their vse. In this forme *Iuan de Barbaran*, buried his Lord

and Maister, and after the buriall he caused the funerall pompe to be solemnised, according as he was able, at his owne cost. After all this good wyll and dilligence was shewed: he went to seeke his Chyldren, which went wandring astray, to procure theyr securitie.

The CHILI men were now Lordes and Rulers in the Cittie. By this successe we may learne and see the worldly thinges, and the varietie of fortune, that in so short a tyme, a Gentleman who had discouered, conquered, and gouerned so great Countries, so many Kingdomes, such innumerable sums of Treasure: who had giuen so great rentes and liuings, in respect of time, the greatest Prince in the world had not done the lyke. And now to be suddenly slaine, by the handes of onely twelue men, at noone tyme, being in a Cittie, where all the Cittizens were eyther his seruants, kinsemen, or Soldiours, vnto whome, generally he had giuen sufficient liuing, and none among them would come to succour him: nay, rather they fled away, euen the Seruaunts of his owne house, and his noble corps so vily buried. And all the infinite Treasure which he possessed, consumed in a moment, not hauing so much left to burie him, according to the degree and state of his person: and all these thinges to happen vnto him after he had thereof sufficient warning by sundrie men, as heere before hath been declared. This hath happened the .xxvi. day of JUNE. 1541.

¶ Of the Customes and qualities of the Marquesse, *Don Francisco Pizarro*, and the Discouerer, *Don Diego de Almagro*. Chap. 9.

SIthens this Historie and Discouery of the Prouince of PERU, hath origen from the two valiant Capitaines, of whome hyther vnto we have spoken : Who are the Marquesse, *Don Francisco Pizarro*, and *Don Diego de Almagro* : It is meete and conuenient to write theyr customes and qualities, comparing them together, as *Plutarchus* vseth, when he writeth of two Capitaines, which are in any respect comparable one to the other : and touching the lynage of these our Capitaines, at the beginning of this Historie, is written as much as could be knowen. But in the residue they were bothe valiaunt persons of great courage, they were also great sufferers of paynes and trauails, and verie vertuous, they were freends to doo plesure to al men, at theyr owne cost. They were much lyke of inclynation, especially, in the state of lyuing, for neyther of them was married, although the youngest of them bothe at the tyme of theyr death, was aboue three score and fve yeeres of age.

They were both enclined to affayres of Warres, although, *Don Diego de Almagro*, when occasion of Warres wanted, applied him selfe to thinges of gaynes : they were neere of one age, when they tooke the conquest of PERU in hande, which Discouerie and conquest, they tooke the paynes which hath bene declared although the MARQUESSE dyd suffer greater trauaile, and passed greater peryls then *Don Diego*. For whylst the one was occupied in the greatest part of the Discouerie, the other

abode in PANAMA prouiding necessaries and furniture for him, as lykewise hath bene declared. They were both noble minded, and always they pretended and conceyued haughty thinges, they were gentle and amyable to theyr Soldiourism, they were equall in lyberallitie: although in shewe, *Don Diego* had the aduantage, because he loued that his gift should be published and blowne abroad: vnto which condition the *Marquesse* was contrarie, for he would not permit that his lyberall gifts should be spoken of: but rather procured to haue them left in secrete, hauing more respect to prouide for the necessitie of such as wanted, then to obtaine vaine-glorious report.

It once happened that a poor Souldiour, had his cheefe ritches in a Horse, which dyed of an vnknown disease, of which mishap the MARQUESSE hauing vnderstanding, and comming downe into his Tennis Court, thinking to find the horse soldiour there, he brought in his bosome a wedge of Golde, of ten pound weight, to giue vnto him with his owne hands: and not finding him there at that instant, he chaunced to make a match at play, and without putting off his coate, he played his match, because he would not that any should see the wedge of Gold which was in the bosom. The play continued the space of three howres, and then came the soldior for whome the golde was brought, the which he delyuered vnto him secretly, saying: that he had rather haue giuen him three times as much, then to suffer the paines which he had taken in his long tarying: with many other lyke examples whiche might a length be spoken of.

So that alwayes the MARQUESSE almes and gifts were

distributed by his owne handes, and with as much secrecie as might be, yea, and alwayes procured the recyuers to keepe silence: And for this consideration, *Don Diego* was helde to be more liberall, for although he gaue largely, yet he had a forme how it whould seem much more then it was: notwithstanding, touching this vertue of Magnificence, they may iustly be called equall. The MARQUESSE also was wont to say, that considering the company of aduenture and fellowship made betweene them, that neither of them could giue anything wherein the other had not his part, and therefore as liberall was he, which permitted the other to giue: and for comprobation, this shall serue. That where they were bothe the ritcheest men, bothe in Rent and Treasure, and as lyberally might dispend the same, as any Prince in the world, not hauing a kingly Crowne: yet they came bothe to death with great pouertie: that at this day, there is not any remembraunce of anything proper, which was theirs: sauing, that all theyr good and lands, they had not wherewithall to burie them: as the lyke is written of *Cato* and *Sulla*, and of many other ROMANE Captaines, which were buried of almes.

These two valiant Captaines, were affectioned to doo for theyr seruants and souldiors, bothe to enrich them, and to deliver them from peryls. But the MARQUESSE dyd rather in that respect exceed: for once it happened passing the Riuer called BARRANCA, that the great Currant caried away one of his INDIANS of seruice, which by mishap was fallen therein: and when the MARQUESSE sawe the peryll of his seruaunt, he forthwith stripped him selfe, and leapt into the Riuer, hauing good skill of

swimming, and pluckt him out by the haire of his head : putting himself in great daunger, through the extreame force of the Currant, in such sort that the valiantest men in all his host, durst not take the lyke enterprise in hande : whereupon some of his Captaines did reprehend him ouer much boldnesse, vnto whome he aunswered, saying : Ye know not what thing it is to loue a seruant well.

Although the MARQUESSE gouerned long time, and more quietly : yet *Don Diego* was more ambitious, and desirous of rule and dignitie. Bothe of them conserued antiquitie, in their ordinarie apparell, euen from their youth vpwardes, especially the MARQUESSE, who euer vsed to weare ordinarily a Coate of black cloath, with long quarters, and short waisted, his shooes of a white Deere skin, and a white felt Hat, and his Sworde and Dagger of auncient facion. And when through the importunate request of his seruants, vpon any solempne holy day, he happened to weare a Gowne furred with Martins, which the Lord MARQUESSE CORTEZ had sent to him from the new SPAIN : as soone as he came from Church, he would throwe it from him, and vsed to haue a towell about his necke. In the time of Peace, he vsed much to play at Tennis, or at Bowles, and therefore cheeflie he vsed the Towell about his necke, to wyepe the sweat from his face.

Bothe these Captaines were most patient in paynes taking, and also in any extremitie of hunger : But particularly the MARQUESSE, shewed the same in the exercise of the sayde pastimes, for there were very fewe young men that could endure with him. He was also



more enclyned to any kinde of pastime, then Don Diego, so that many tymes he would play at the Bowles, all the whole day, and passed not with whome he played, although it were eyther with Marriner or Myller, nor yet would permitte any to take vp his Bowle for him, nor to vse towarde him any vsuall cermonies of duety, accustomed to his Estate and dignitie. It was some waighty matter that should cause him to leaue from play, especially, when he was a looser. But if at any he had aduertisement of rebellion, or insurrection of INDIANS : then foorth with his Armor was at hand, and Launce in readinesse, he used in such extremities, to ryde Poste alone through the Cittie, towarde the place where the altecation was, without tarying for more company.

These Captaynes were so ready, and of such haughty courage in the Indian warre, that eyther of them would not let to giue the Encounter, although the enimies were in number .100000. They were of good vnderstanding and iudgement in any thing, that was to be prouided for the warres, or for gouernment : especially, being bothe men vnlearned, for they could neyther write, reade, or yet firme, which was a thing of great defect, in such noble Personages, dealing in such waightie affayres.

Yet neuertheless, in all other thinges, of vertuous inclynations, they shewed them selues to be Noble men, onely the former want excepted, wherein the auncient wyse men, dyd holde such want for an argument of basenesse of lynnage.

The MARQUESSE was a man that had great confidence in his seruants and freendes. All the despatches which he made, as well in gouernment, and reprehencion of

INDIANS he vsed to make two markes, betweene the which *Antonio Picado*, his secretary fyrmed, the name of *Francisco Pizarro*. But these men may excuse them selues, as *Ouidius* excused *Romulus*, saying : that he was an euyl Aslonomer, but rather had more knowledge in Armes then in Letters.

Bothe these Captaynes were so affable and playne, among theyr people, that they vsed oftentimes to goe from house to house in the Cittie, to visite theyr neyghbours alone, and tooke such faire as they founde, and were alwayes ready to come to any honest neyghbour, that would inuite eyther of them. They were equally abstynent and moderate in theyr feeding, and dyet, as also in restraining of sensuallitie, and especially from abusing of any SPANISH Women : for they deemed that they could not deale therein, without preiudice of theyr neyghbours, whose Wiues or Daughters, those Women were : they neyther ouermuch enclyned to the INDIAN Women.

The MARQUESSE had the company of an Indian Gentlewoman, who was sister to *Atabaliba*, by whome he had a Sonne, named *Don Gonsalo*, who deceased at fowreteene yeeres of age : and a Daughter named *Donna Francisca*. By an other INDIAN Woman of Cusco, he had an other Sonne, called *Don Francisco*.

*Don Diego de Almagro*, had that sonne of whome we haue spoken, who slewe the MARQUESSE, which Sonne, he had by an Indian Woman of PANAMA. They bothe receyued honour at the Emperours hands, for as hath bene declared, to *Don Francisco Pizarro*, he gaue the tyttle or addition of MARQUESSE, and made him Gouver-

nour of new CASTILE, and also ordayned him Knight of the order of Saint *Iames*. To *Don Diego de Almagro*, he gaue the gouernment of newe TOLEDO, and the tytle of cheefe Discouerer. Particularly, the MARQUESSE was greatly affectioned, and helde in great feare and reuerence the name of his Maiestie: in so much that he abstayned from dooing of many thinges that he had power to doo, declaring that he would not that his Maiestie should say, how he ascended in the Land: and oftentimes when he was present at the melting of the Syluer and Golde, he would ryse from his Chayre, to take vp the graynes of Syluer and Golde, which fell from the clypping, saying: that with his mouth, when handes fayled, he would gather together the Kinges porcion.

These two Gentlemen, were equall euen in theyr kindes of death, for the MARQUESSE brother, put *Don Diego* to death, and *Don Diego* his Sonne, slewe the MARQUESSE. The MARQUESSE was desirous to benefit the Countrey, by tyllage and other commodities.

He buylt a fayre house in the Cittie of the kinges: he also buylt for the benefite of the Cittie, two rowes of Mylles, along the Riuer side, in which buylding he occupied him selfe, at all tymes of leysure, giuing his counsell and opinion to the Maister workemen: He tooke great paynes in setting forward the workes of the Cathedrall Church of the Cittie of the kinges, and other lyke Monumentes.

¶ Howe *Don Diego de Almagro* the younger, ioyned an Armie of men of Warre, and howe he slewe certaine Gentlemen: and howe *Alonso de Aluarado* spread his Ensigne for his Maiestie. Chap. 10.

After that *Don Diego* had gotten the Citie, into his power, and taken the wandes of Iustice from the Officers, and placed other by his owne election: he then apprehended Doctour *Velasques*, Lieutenant to the MARQUESSE, and *Antonio Picardo*, his Secretarie, and chose for the cheefe Captaynes of his warres, *Iuan Tellio* Cittizen of CIVILE, and *Francisco Chaues* and also *Sotelo*. When the noyse was spread abroad, of the election of these new Captaynes: al the Vagabounds, and ydle persons which were in that countrey came to this cittie pretending lybertie, to robbe, spoyle, and lyue at pleasure.

And to furnishe those Roges with money: he tooke the Fiftes appertayning to the King, and also the goodes of such as were decassed, which was kept in a common Chest, to performe theyr Testamentes and Legacies. But afterwarde, discencion began to growe among them selues, for some of the principall personnes, mooued with enuie, were mynded to kyll *Iuan de Herrada*, seeing that although *Don Diego* had the name of gouernour and Captayne generall, yet the sayde *Herrada*, ruled and gouerned all. And the mutiny beeing knowen, many were executed, especially: *Francisco de Chaues*, and also *Antonio de Oribuela*, Citizen of SALAMANCA, was beheaded. Because when he came from SPAIN, he sayde, that they were Tyrants.

Afterwarde, *Don Diego* sent his Messengers vnto all

the Cittie of his gouernment, wylling them to admytte and receuye him for theyr gouernour. And although he was accepted in the most Citties, for the feare onely which they had of him, yet in CHACHAPOYAS, where *Alonso de Aluarado* was Lieutenant, as soone as the Pursuiantes were come, with the commaundement from *Don Diego*, he commaunded them to be arrested, and also fortified him selfe to withstand him in obedience, and had an especiall confidence in the people of the Countrey, and also in a hundred men of warre, which he had attending on his person. Whereupon he spread his Ensign on the behalfe of his Maiestie, esteeming in nothing the threatninges, bragges, and fayre promises of *Don Diego*, which were written vnto him by his Letters: But rather made a playne aunswer, that in no wyse he would receyue him for Gouvernour, vntyll such tyme as his Maiestie should commaund the same by expresse order and Commission. And in the meane whyle, he hoped through the helpe of God, and those Gentlemen which were in his company, to reuenge the death of the Lord MARQUESSE, and to punishe theyr disobedience and offences, doone against his Maiestie.

When *Don Diego* vnderstoode the pretence of *Aluarado*: incontinent he despatched Captayne *Garcia de Aluarado*, with a great company of foote men, and Horse men, commaunding him to encounter, and giue him the Onset with all his industrie and power, and that in the way as he should passe, to enter into the Citie of Saint *Mighell*, and there to take bothe Armor and Horses from the Cittizens, and at his returne to doo the lyke in the Cittie of TRUGILLIO.

In this order *Garcia de Aluarado* tooke his iorney by Sea, vntyll he arriued at *Pueta Sancta*, which standeth fiftene Leagues distaunt from *Trugillio*, where he mette Captaine *Alonso Cabrera*, who came flying away with all the people of the Towne of *Guanuco*, to ioygne with the Cittizens of *Trugillio*, against *Don Diego*: which cause beeing perfectly knowen, he tooke bothe him and certayne of the cheefest of his company. Who as soone as he was come to the Cittie of Saint *Mighell*, he caused to strike of the heads, bothe of him, and one *Villegas* which came in his company.

¶ Howe the Cittie of *Cusco* arose for his Maiestie, and chose for their Captayne Generall, *Pedro Aluares Holguin*, and what followed. Chap. 11.

WHen the Messengers and Prouisions of *Don Diego*, came to the Citie of *Cusco* where at that tyme, *Diego de Silua*, sonne of *Felisiano de Silua*, borne in the Cittie of *Rodrigo*, and *Francisco de Caruatjall*, Sheriffes of the Cittie. But *Caruatjall* was afterwarde Campe Maister to *Gonsalo Pizarro*: So that the Estate of the Cittie agreede in Councell, not to allowe, nor yet receuye him: although openly they durst not denie his commaundement, and request, vntyll they might perfectly vnderstande, and know what number of men, and prouision he had in readinesse, to proceede with his enterprise: wher vpon they made a breefe aunswere, saying: that they disyred it might please *Don Diego*, to send a more ample authoritie and power, touching the

premisses, then as yet he had done, and then in continent they would allow the same. After that the Messengers were dispatched backe againe with this aunswere: the Estate of the Cittie, calling to remembraunce howe *Gomer de Tordoya*, who was one of the cheefest of Councell of the Cittie, was at that instaunt recreating him selfe abroad in the Countrey. They agreede to send aduertisement vnto him, of all the proceedinges of *Don Diego*: but it so happened, that theyr Messenger mette him comming towarde the Cittie, and when they had enfourmed him of theyr Mesage, he hauing a Merlin Hawke vpon his fyst, wrested the head from the body, saying: from henceforwarde, it is more conuenient to exercise feates of Warre, then to goe a Hawking. And comming towarde the Citie, he entred in the night season: where secretly he dealt with the estate of the Citie in Councell, what was most necessarie to be done, and then he departed agayne, to the place where Capayne *Castro* was: with whome he concluded, to sende a Mesenger to *Pedro Ansuares*, Lieutenaunt of *CHARCAS*, to wyll him to ryse on the behalfe of his Maiestie: and then the sayde *Gomer de Tordoya*, with all his power, went after *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*: who was gone with a hundred men, to encounter with certayne *INDIANS*, and with good happe he ouertooke him: at which meeting he certified him of the newes at *Cusco*, beseeching him to accept the charge of so iuste and honourable an Enterpryse, as to be theyr generall and cheefe Ruler ouer theyr Hoste: in consideration whereof, he also offered to be his Soldiour and the first man that should obey him. Vpon which request *Pedro Aluares* accepted

the charge, and incontinent spread his Ensigne in the behalfe of his Maiestie. And this being done, they conuocated the inhabitauntes of the Cittie of AREQUIPA, with whome they went to Cusco : where, at theyr comming, they found many congregated on the behalfe of *Don Diego*, who foorthwith fled towardes him, to the number of fiftie personnes. After whome followed Captayne *Castro* and *Hernando de Bachiaco*, with certayne Hargabusiers, who ouertooke them in the night season, and apprehended them with whome they returned to Cusco.

The Councill of Cusco hearing of this good successe : came and ioyfully recayued him, and with conformitie of all the Captaynes, both swore and chose *Pedro Aluares Holguin* for Captayne and cheefe Iudge of all the dominions of PERU, vntyll such tyme as his Maiestie should otherwyse prouide, whereupon warre was proclaymed against *Don Diego* and his retinew. The Cittizens also of Cusco bound themselues to paie all such summes of money which he should spend of the Kings Treasure among his Souldiours, if that his Maiestie should not thinke well or accept the same in iust and lawfull accoumpt. And for the furnishing of these proceedinges, all the Cittizens of CHARCAS, AREQUIPA, and Cusco, offered theyr goodes and personnes, so that in shorte space there ioyned together, aboue 350. men, of whome were 150. Horsemen, a hundred Hargabusiers, and a hunderd Pykemen. But notwithstanding, *Pedro Aluares*, hauing intelligence how *Don Diego* had eyght hundred men and more in his Campe, he therefore durst not abyde his comming in the Cittie of Cusco : but



rather chose to passe with his power into the Mountaynes, to ioine with *Alonso de Aluarado*, who lykewise was rysen in behalfe of his Maiestie, and also, expecting there to meete with freendes and seruitors of the MARQUESSE, which were hydden in those Desartes. So that he proceeded with his company in good order, meaning that if *Don Diego* should happen to meete him in his way, to giue him battayle.

And when he departed from Cusco, he left for the defence of the Cittie, as many men as was thought sufficient, for that prupose, he appoynted *Gomez de Tordoya* for Campe Maister, and *Garcilaso de la Vega*, and *Pedro Ansuerez* for Captaynes of the Horsemen, and the charge of the Infanterie or footemen he commended to Captaine *Castro*, and the Offices of *Alerez* of the Standard royall, he committed to Martine de Rolles.

¶ How *Don Diego* went to seeke *Pedro Aluarez*, and finding him not, he passed to *Cusco*. Chap. 12.

**D***On Diego*, hauing vnderstanding of the proceedinges in Cusco, and how *Pedro Aluarez* was departed out of the Cittie, with all the power that he might make: whereupon he iudges that he was gone into the Mountaynes, to ioine with *Alonso de Aluarado* so that he determyned to meete him on the way, and to stoppe his passage: the which his pretence he could not bring to passe, with such expedition as he desired, for staying for *Garcia de Aluarado*, whome he had sent for

by Poste, at whose comming they left proceeding after *Alonso de Aluarado*, and at the tyme when they came to the Cittie of TRUGILLIO, he was mynded againe to disturbe his passage, had not the Towne of LEUANTO, which standeth in CHACHAPOYAS, perswaded him to the contrarie.

When *Garcia de Aluarado* was come to the Citie of the Kinges, *Don Diego* foorthwith tooke his iourney against *Pedro Aluarez* with three hundred Horsemen, one hundred Hargabusiers, and a hundred and fiftie Pikemen. But before his departure, he banished out of the Countrey, the Lord MARQUESSE children, and beheaded *Antonio Picado*, after that he had extreemely racked him, and put him to sundry tormentes, onely that he should confesse where the Lord MARQUESSE Treasure lay. This done, he proceeded on his iorney: but before he had passed two leagues from thence, came secretly certayne prouisions from the Lycenciate *Vaca de Castro*, which were sent from the countrey of QUITO directed to father *Thomas de Saint Martine*, and *Fransisco de Barrio Nuevo*, giuing vnto them thereby authoritie to deale in the gouernment of the Countrey, vntyll that he him selfe might come thether.

Whereupon the Estate and Councell of the Cittie had secrete conference, obaying the prouicions which were at that instant orderly presented, and admitted the Lycenciate *Vaca de Castro* for Gouvernor, and *Geronimo de Aliaga* for his Lieutenaunt, because he was so appointed by lyke prouisions: After the doing of these things, the Aldermen fled to the Cittie of TRUGILLIO, and many other Cittizens in theyr company: these

things were not so secretly done, but the same night *Don Diego* had vnderstanding of all at large, whereupon he was minded to returne to seeke the Cittie: but fearing least *Pedro Aluarez* should escape him, he durst not retyre, and likewise, because his Soldiours should not come to the knowledge, how there was a new gouernor in the land: So that, for these causes he proceeded forward: yet notwithstanding, when newes was knowen in *Don Diego* his campe, many of his Soldiours fled from him: especially, father *Thomas de Saint Martine*, *Diego de Alguero*, *Iuan de Sayanendra*, *Gomez de Aluaredo*, and the Factor *Yllansucarez de Carauaiall*: in this iourney happened to fall sick *Iuan de Herrada* of a certaine infirmitie, wherof he died. By meane wherof *Don Diego* was forced to stay his iorney, and in the meane while, *Pedro Aluarez* passed by into the Valley of XAUXA, where *Don Diego* thought to haue abode his comming: yet at the length he followed him, so that they were not farre a sunder, the one from the other.

*Pedro Aluares*, imagining by coniecture, that he was not sufficiently manned to encounter with *Don Diego*, he vsed this pollicie, to decyue him in this sort: He appointed twentie Horsemen on a night, to enter vpon the face of the Vautgarde of *Don Diego*, to apprehende as many of his men as they possibly might, the which his commaundement was accordingly done: and in the assault they tooke three men prisoners, which they brought away with them, of the which *Pedro Aluares* commaunded to hang two, and the thirde he promised to pardon, and to giue him a thousand Poyzes in golde, on condition that he should goe to the Campe of *Don*

Pollicie.

*Diego*, and there to giue warning to as many of his freends as he might, to be in readinesse to ayde him, for that the next night following, he meant to enter *Don Diego* his Campe, on the right hand. And for the performance of this facte, the Soldiour made a solempne oathe: for *Pedro Aluarez*, fayned that he had put in him his faithfull and speciall trust, not to discouer his secrets. Whereupon the young man, with the desire of the thousand Poyzes, departed to accomlishe his promise, and beeing Soldiour to *Don Diego* he passed so much the more surer on his way.

When *Don Diego* saw his Soldiour came, and by him vnderstoode how *Pedro Aluares* had hanged two of his men, and that he had released that one man, without any speciall cause knowen, he fell in suspition of the matter, and therupon brought his Soldiour to the Rack, who then opened all the secrets that was committed vnto him, vnto whose sayinges *Don Diego* gaue credite, thinking all to be true that was confessed. Whereupon the night following, he prepared all his force on that hand, where he thought *Pedro Aluares* would haue entred: but God wot, *Pedro Aluares* meant no such thing, for as soone as he had dispatched the spie, the night beeing darke, he remooued his Campe, and with all possible haste proceeded on his way, leauing the enemie expecting all the night long, when he shaould be assaulted, vntyll at length he sawe how he was deciued and laughed to scorne, so that then he also remooued his Campe, and continewed on his way, with great haste after him. When *Pedro Aluares* vnderstoode the speed that his enimie made: he sent a Poste to *Alonso de Aluarado*, praying

him to come and succour him. Who as soone as the Poste had done his Message vnto him : he came with all his power to ayde his freend *Pedro Aluares*. But when *Don Diego* vnderstoode, that bothe his contraries were ioyned with all theyr force, he ceassed from following of them, and tooke his way towarde Cusco. Then *Pedro Aluares*, and *Alonso de Aluarado*, sent theyr Messengers, to *Qurto*, with aduertisement of all theyr proceedinges, to *Vaca de Castro*, beseeching him to make speede to come vnto them, promising that with Gods helpe, they would deluyder the countrey vnto him.

In XAUJA deceased *Iuan de Herrada*, and *Don Diego* sent some part of his Hoast by the way of the plaines, to ioyne with the inhabitants of *Arequipa*, whether his Captains also went, who robbed and spoyled all that they might lay hold on in the Cittie, yea, and not contented with the ritches which they found aboue ground, they digged and delued in Churches, because some there were that had informed, how the Cittizens had buried theyr Treasures there.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro*, came to the Campe of *Pedro Aluares*, and *Alonso de Aluarado*, and was by them recayued for Gouvernour, and what followed. Chap. 13.

THE euyl successe of *Vaca de Castro*, in his Nauigation, hath beene already declared, how comming from PANAMA, to passe into PERU, he happened to loose an Anker, wheby his Shippe roade at an extremitie. By meanes whereof, he was forced to arme at the Port,

called *Buena Ventura*, which is as much to say : as, THE PORT OF GOOD FORTUNE, and from thence he came to the gouernation of BENALCASAR, and so into PERU : In which iourney, he passed much trouble, because the way was long, and vnprouided of victualles, and he also weake of infirmity, and not accutomed to such kinde of diet : yet notwithstanding the premisses, in POPAYAN, he had vnderstanding of the MARQUESSE death, and of all the successe of the affayres in PERU : in consideration whereof, he continewed daily on his iourney, hoping that with his presence, all discord should ende.

It is to be vnderstoode, that although the Lycenciate *Vaca de Castro*, his comming, was principally to make information of the Death of *Don Diego de Almagro*, and of all such thinges which happened concerning the same, without suspending the MARQUESSE gouernment. Yet moreouer, he had secret Letters Patents, in such sort, that if in the meane whyle that he abode in that Countrey, should happen the MARQUESSE to decease, and leaue this mortall life : that then he should take and exercise his roome and charge, vntyll his Maiestie should otherwise prouide. By vertue of which Letters Patent, he was accepted and receyued, as soone as he was come to the Campe of *Pedro Aluarez* and *Alonso de Aluaredo*, where also were many others, that hauing notice of his comming, came thether to receyue him.

He brought in his company, Captayne *Lorenzo de Aldana*, who was at that instant gouernour in QUITO by the appointment of the MARQUESSE : From hence he sent, before his departure *Pedro de Puellas*, to prepare all furniture necessarie for the Warres : he despatched also

*Gomez de Rojas*, borne in the Towne of CUELLAR, with his power and prouisions, directed to the Rulers of the Cittie of Cusco : requiring them to admitte him according to the contentes thereof, who made such haste in his iourney, that he came to the Cittie, before *Don Diego*, and ascited the Cittizens with his message, which was wyllingly accepted.

When *Vaca de Castro* passed by BRACAMOROS, Capitaine *Pedro de Vargara*, who was occupied in the conquest of that Prouince, came and submitted him selfe vnto him, and to serue him, he left a Towne which he had newly inhabited without people, in which Towne he had once fortified him selfe, meaning there to resist the force of *Don Diego de Almagro*. When *Vaca de Castro* was come to the Citie of TRUGILLIO : he found there *Gomez de Tordoya*, who was lately come from the Campe about certaine words which he had passed with *Pedro Aluarez* and with him were *Garcilasso de la Vega* and other Gentlemen.

At the instaint when *Vaca de Castro* departed from TRUGILLIO to goe to the Campe of *Pedro Aluarez*, he had in his company aboue two hundred men of warre well furnished : as soone as he was come to the Campe, bothe *Pedro Aluarez*, and *Alonso de Aluarado* receyued him ioyfully : and after that he had shewed the Emperours order vnto them they delyuered incontinent theyr Ensignes vnto him, and he forthwith restored them againe, sauing the royall Standard which he kept for him selfe.

This done, he appointed *Pedro Aluares Holguin* Campe maister, and sent him with all the Armie to XAUXA to

abide there his further order, whylst he went downe to the Cittie of the kinges, to gather together all such men, Armour and Municion, which there he might finde, leauing the Cittie furnished. He commaunded also that Captaine *Diego de Roias* should alwayes goe twentie leagues before the Armie with thirty lyght Horsemen, to discouer the way: he sent lyke wise *Diego de Mora* for Lieutenant of the Cittie of *TRIGULLIO*, and with great dexteritie and diligence, he prouided all other thinges necessarie for his pretended enterprise now in hand, euen as though all his lyfe time, he had bene brought vp in the Warres.

¶ How *Don Diego* slewe *Garcia de Aluardo* in *Cusco*, and howe he came out of the Cittie with his Armie, against *Vaca de Castro*. Chap. 14.

IT hath bene declared, howe that after that *Don Diego*, sawe that he could not ouertake *Pedro Aluares*, he went to *Cusco*: but before his comming, *Christouall de Sotelo*, who he had sent before him, had taken possession of the Cittie, and placed the Officers of Iustice, according to his owne pleasure, and vnplaced such as were appointed by *Vaca de Castro*: As soone as *Don Diego* was come to the Cittie, he began to gather all the Artillerie, and Gunpouder that he might come by.

In *PERU*, there is good prouision to make Ordenaunce, by reason of the aboundance of Mettall, which there is founde: and also at that tyme there were certayne *LEVANTISCOS*, who were cunning maisters in casting of



Artyllerie, and also expert in the making of Gunpowder, whereof they had store, by the meane of the great quantitie of Salt peeter, which there is found.

He also made Weapon for such as wanted, of paste of Siluer and Copper, mixed together, and of the same stuffe they wrought exceeding good Corselets: besides this prouision, all the Armor of the Countrey was brought to his Campe, so that he furnished two hundred Hargabusiers. He also ordained certaine men of Armes, although vntyll this time they vsed in *PERU*, to fight on Horsebacke, after the Genet facion, and seldome vsed to skyrnish with lyght Horsemen.

Being in this readinesse, happened a certaine discorde betweene Captain *Garcia de Aluarado*, and *Christouall de Satelo*, in the which, *Sotelo* was slaine, whereupon great mischiefe was lyke to ensue, among the Soldiours, be cause each of them had many freends, so that all the whole Campe was deuided. So that if *Don Diego* with amorous wordes had not pacified the matter, thei had one slaine an other. Notwithstanding *Garcia de Aluarado*, vnderstoode that *Don Diego* was greatly affectioned to *Sotelo*, and would not let to reuenge his quarell. Wherefore, from that tyme forward, he had the greater regard to loke to his owne safetie, not onely for the defence of his persone, but likewise, mynded to kill *Don Diego*, the whiche his pretence he determined to put in execution. So that on a daie he inuited hym to Dinner, purposyng to kille hym in his diete. But *Don Diego* suspectyng the matter, faigned that he was not well at ease, after that he had excepted the banket.

When *Garcia de Aluarado* sawe that his deuise could

take no place, hauing all thing in readinesse for his pretended enterprise, he determined with diuers of his frendes, to goe and to importune hym to come to the banket, and in the waie as he went, he chanced to disclose his minde to one *Martine Carillio*, who perswaded hym, not to proceede vpon that iourney, for, said he, I feare you will be slaine: an other soldiari likewise gaue hym the same counsell, but all their aduise could not preuaile. *Don Diego* fained hym selfe sicke, and laie hym downe vpon his bed, hauyng secretly in an other chamber certaine armed men. So that when *Garcia de Aluarado* entered the chamber with his companie, he saied vnto *Don Diego*, Sir, if it maie please your lordship to arise, for your sicknesse is nothing, you shall also find ease, if you will recreate your self awhile, for although you eate nothing, yet you shall garnishe our table. Vnto whom *Don Diego* aunswered that he was content, and forthwith arose and called for his cloake: for he laye vpon his bedde hauyng on his priuie coate, his Rapier and Dagger. *Garcia de Aluarado* and the residue, were goyng out at the Chamber doore, but when the moste of them were cleane without the doore, and as *Aluerado* was passyng out before *Don Diego*, *Iuan de Herrada* whiche stood next the dore, staied his going out, and made the dore fast, which lockt without any keye, and thereupon tooke *Garcia de Aluarado* in his armes, saying: yeeld thy self for prisoner, and then *Don Diego* drew his Rapier and strake him, saying: he shall not be prisoner, but rather slaine. And then came for them *Iuan Balsa*, *Alonso de Sayauedra*, and *Diego Mendez*, brother to *Rodrigo Orgonios* and others of them which were in

ambush, who gaue hym so many woundes that he was soone dead.

When this newes was knowne in the Citie, there began a broile emong them. But when *Don Diego* came out into the Market place of the Citie, he quieted the people: yet notwithstanding many of *Garcia de Aluarado* his freendes fled awaie. After this successe *Don Diego* proceeded out of the Citie with his armie, to encounter with *Vaca de Castro*, whom he vnderstood had ioyned with *Pedro Aluarez*, and *Alonso de Aluarado*, and was commyng the waie of *XAUXA* to meete with hym.

In all this iourney *Pauloz* brother to *Inga* serued *Don Diego*, who *Don Diego de Almagro* the elder now deceased, had instituted *Inga* whose aide was of great importance: Because alwaies he went before the Campe. And although he had but fewe Indians in companie, yet all the Prouinces in the land had respect vnto hym, and for his sake thei prouided bothe victualls and Indians to carie the fardage, and other necessarie thinges.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro* departed from the citie of the Kinges to *Xauxa*, and what his doynges were whilst he abode there. Chap. 15.

**A**Fter that *Vaca de Castro* came to the citie of the Kinges, he caused many Hargabuzes to be made hauyng at that instant many connyng maisters fit for the purpose. He furnished hym also of all other necessities, for the prouision whereof, he borrowed of marchantes the

somme of 60000. poizes of gold, because *Don Diego* had spent all the kynges treasure, before his commyng. When all thinges were in readinesse *Vaca de Castro* left in the citie of the Kynges for his Lieutenant *Francisco de Barrio Nuevo*, and *Ihon de Guenarra* for captaine of the Nauie, and then he tooke his iourney with all his power toward *XAUXA*, leauing order in the citie: that if *Don Diego* should happen to come vpon the citie, by any other waie not expected, as some did imagine that he would, that then all the Citezens with their wiues, children, families, and goodes, should goe about the shippes, vntill such tyme as he with his armie should followe hym, to giue hym battaile. At his comyng to *XAUXA*, he found *Pedro Aluarez* abidyng his comyng with all his men of warre, whiche he there furnished with Amor, Pikes, and gonpowder, that there had had caused to be made. Then *Vaca de Castra* deuided the horsemen which he had brought with hym, betwene *Pedro Aluarez*, *Pedro Ansuerex*, and *Garcilaso de la Vega*, whom he ordeined captaines of the horsemen, and part of the footemen he commended to *Pedro de Vargas*, and *Nunio de Castro*, who were appointed, for captaines of infanterie. He like wise, ordeined other two companies, the one of horsemen, which he assigned to *Gomes de Aluaredo*, and the other of hargabuziers which he appointed to the Bachellier *Iuan Velez de Gueuara*, who although he were a Lawier, yet he was an excellent good souldiar, and of an exceedyng good industrie: For he it was, that deuised to make the Hargabuzes, for the souldiars of his companie, and neuerthelese did exercise also his vocation towards the law. For it did appere that he

was in those daies appointed Iudge, whiche office he did vse in the fore noone of euery daie, and at the after noone he apparelled him self as a good Souldiar, in hose and dublet of colours, embroderd with gold, which becam him exceeding well, with his Ierken and plume of fethers, with his Hargabuze on his shulder, exercising bothe hym and his men, in the practice of their peeces.

In this forme *Vaca de Castro*, ordeined his hoste, the which were in number 700 men, whereof were 370 horsemen, a 170 Hargabuziers, and the residue were footemen. He appointed for cheef sariant of the Campe, *Francisco de Carauajall*, who after ward was campe maister to *Gonsalo Pizarro*. By whose order the whole hoast was gouerned, because he was experte in the warres, and had exercised the experiences of a soldiar aboue xl. yeres, he had like wise borne office of liutenant, of captaine in Italy.

In this meane while came messenagers to *Vaca de Castro*, from *Gonsalo Pizarro*, who had returned vnto *Quirto*, from the discouerie of the land of *ZINAMON*, as before hath been declared by the saied messengers: he signified vnto hym how he ment to aide him with all his force. Vnto whom *Vaca de Castro* wrote, giuyng him most hartie thanks, for his gentle offer: praiung hym, that he would not trouble hym self, but rather at that present abide in *Quirto* because, said he, I hope to come to some good ends with *Don Diego*, and that he will submit him self to his maiesties seruice. This aunswere he made, thinkyng to bridle the presumption of *Gonsalo Pizarro*, also he like wise, imagined that his commyng

would hinder the agreement with *Don Diego*, because *Pisarro* might hope of some reuenge, and for that consideration also, *Don Diego* would feare to yeeld hym self. Others helde opinion, that if *Gonsalo Pisarro* should happen to come to the Campe, that then he would presume to take vpon hym the office of Generall, beyng a man so well beloued among the Commonaltie, all those thinges considered, *Vaca de Castro* commaunded that the Lorde Marques his children should remaine in the custodie, and charge of their Tutors, in the Cities of saint MIGHELL and TRUGILLIO, and in nowise come to the Citie of the Kynges, vntill other order should be taken : because the securitie of their persones was there most certain, then in LYNIA.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro* proceded with his hoste from Xauxa to Guamanga, and what passed betweene hym and *Don Diego*. Chap. 16.

WHEN *Vaca de Castro*, had set in order his armie in XAUXA, he proceeded towards *Guamanga*, in which iourney he had vnderstandyng how *Don Diego* was commyng towarde hym, and either to take the Towne, or els to plant him self with his power to hinder his passage at a Riuer, which of force he should passe so that in the takyng of either of them, the anoiance should haue been great to the enemye : because the towne is enuironed with valleies of great depth, which did exceedingly fortifie. But Captaine *Diego de Rojas*, who with his companie led the waie, forsaue the daungers, who

also had knowledge of the pretence of *Don Diego*, and thereupon in shorte space built there a Tower, to abide the commyng of *Vaca de Castro*, who hauyng intelligence thereof, made the most haste, sendyng before Captaine *Castro*, with certaine hargabuziers to fortifie another euill peece of waie, whiche stood not farre from GUAMANGA called the hill of PARCAS. When *Vaca de Castro*, on an euenyng came within two Leagues of GUAMANGA, he was aduised that the same night, *Don Diego* ment to enter into the Toun, this newes contented hym not, because a greate parte of his armie were farre behinde, so that *Alonso de Aluarado* was forced to returne to gather them together, and when he had so doen, he came with them in good order, although some had iourneyed the same daie more than fve Leagues, armed, with great paine and trauaile, by reason that the waie was asperous with Rocks and Creckes descendyng between hilles, so that at length thei passed by the towne, and lodged all that night on the other side in their armour, because they had no certaine newes from their enemies, vntill the next daie that the Camp was assured by the scoutes, who had discovered more then fve Leagues of ground, and brought likewise aduertisement, how *Don Diego* was at the least nine Leagues from their Campe. Whereupon *Vaca de Castro*, wrote vnto hym by *Francisco Diaquez*, brother vnto *Alonso Diaquez* secretarie to his Maiestie, who was come from *Don Diego* his campe, to praie and require hym on the behalf of his Maiestie, that he would accepte and come to yeeld him self vnder the royall standarde, and in so doyng and also in dischargyng his armie, he should be pardoned of all his former

doinges : but if he refused his mercifull offer, that then he would proceede against hym with all rigor of iustice, as against a traitor, rebell, and disloyall subiecte of his Prince.

Whilest the messenger was goyng on his affaires, he sent a footeman by another waie, clothed in the Indian attire, with sundrie letters to many Gentlemen which were with *Don Diego*. But this footman could not passe secretly, for by the print of his feete passyng through the snoe he was knowne, and also taken prisoner, who as soone as he was brought before *Don Diego*, was forthwith commaunded to be hanged, and likewise *Don Diego* founde him self greatly agreeued with the subtill pollicie and cautell of *Vaca de Castro*, considering that one waie he delt for peace, and contrariwise he sent to sow mutynie in his Camp.

Whereupon in presence of the mesenger, he ordained al his Captaines and men of warre, thoroughly furnished to giue the battaile, and proclaimed also, that who soeuer should kill any Citizen, both the wife and Indians of the dead, should be giuen vnto him : this doen, he sent aunswere to *Vaca de Castro*, by the same messenger, and by *Diego de Mercado*, that in no wise he would yeeld any obedience vnto hym, whilest his enemies were in his companie, who were, *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*, and *Alonso de Aluarado* with their consorts, and likewise he ment not to discharge his armie, vntil he saw pardon from his Maiestie, firmed with his royall hande : for (said he) I giue small credite to the auctoritie of father *Garcia de Loyasa* Cardinall of Ciuill, whom I know not for gouernour, nor yet to haue sufficient power in his



Maiesties absence, for any cause appertaining to India. And where he thought through his subtile practice, that the Gentlemen of his armie would passe vnto hym, he was therein deceiued. But rather that he should thinke, that with greate courage thei all expected the battaile, and would defend the Countrey against all the worlde, as by experiance he should finde, if he durst abide the same: and now (said he) I am on my waie to seeke hym.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro* brought into the field, his whole power to stande to battaile, and what happened vnto hym.  
Chap. 17.

WHEN *Vaca de Castro*, had heard the embassage came from *Don Diego*, and also considered his pertinacie, he marched with his whole power into a plaine called CHUPAS, which stood without the boundes of *Guamanga*, which plaine was very vnfit or asperous to fight battaile in. In this plaine of CHUPAS he abode three daies, in which space, it ceased not from rainyng becuase it was then the middest of winter, and the souldiers attended alwaies armed, because the enemies were at hande, so that hap, what hap might, he determined to abide the battaile, seing that no other meane could be had, he also stood in doubt of some of his men, who had been tofore in the battaile of SALINAS, saiyng that his Maiestie had not accepted of their doynge, consideryng that *Hernando Pizarro*, as yet remained prisoner.

But now to iustifie his doynge, he pronounced sentence openly against *Don Diego*, wherein he condempned hym for a Traitor and Rebell, and to suffer paines of death and losse of goodes, with like penaltie to all his retinewe, with this iudgement and sentence he required all the Captaines to aide and assist hym, to execute the same.

The next daie in the morning, the skoutes gaue warning to prepare for battaile, afferming that the enemies were at hande, who had lodged the same night before, but onely two Leagues from their Campe, and now came marching on their left hand to escape certaine bogges, for to attaine vnto a plaine that stood vpon aloine of hilles, which were in frent of the Campe of *Vaca de Castro* meanyng to take the Towne of GUAMANGA, before the battaile should be giuen, deeming the victorie to be sure on his side, by reason of the greate force of artillerie which he brought with hym.

But when thei came so night together, that the skoutes might talke one with the other, *Vaca de Castro* sent Captaine *Castro* with fiftie hargubuzers to skirmishe with the enemye, whilest the Ensignes might passe certaine hilles, which of force they should goe with greate perrill, for if at that instant *Don Diego* had encountered them, their damage had bin greate, by mene of the Ordnaunce which would haue made a marueilous spoile among the footemen, so that to auoide this perill and to come to the top of the hill with great expedition, *Francisco de Carauaiall*, who then was chiefe Sariant, ordained that each Ensigne without respecte of warlike order, should make all speede possible to get vp to the hill top,

fearing the daunger that might haue happened with the prolongyng the waie.

This counsell was obaied and followed, and whilst the hargubuzers of Captaine *Castro* were skirmishyng, the footemen came to the hill top. In this sorte the whole force of his armie achiued their purposed, and planted them selues in order of battaile vpon the saied hill.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro* set forward his Squadrons against *Don Pedro*, for to giue the battaile. Chap. 18.

**A**Fter that *Vaca de Castro*, sawe all his armie on the toppe of the hille, he commaunded the Cheef Seriant, that he should ordeine the Squadrons, the whiche accordyngly was doen. *Vaca de Castro*, saied vnto them: That first thei should consider who thei were, from whence they came, and for whom thei should fight, and likewise to consider, that at that instante the whole force of that Countrey and Empire, was onely in the strength of their armes. And more ouer, if it should please God that thei should be ouercome, that then death was the equall reward for them all. But if, said he, the victorie bee ours, wee shall not onely shewe our selues loyall, and faithfull Subiectes to our Prince, but also remaine Lordes ouer the landes and treasure, which our enemies now possess, and I for my parte, by the auctoritie which I haue from his Maiestie, and in his royall name, doe assure ye all the same. For, said he, our soueraigne desireth this lande, for no other purpose, but

onely to remunerate all suche, which faithfully shall serue his Maiestie, and I also knowe, that I nede not, to exhort and perswade you to this enterprise, beyng Gentlemen of noble parentage, for your valliaunte hartes, and commendable courage, hath alwaies shewed your true and faithfull meanyng. An now I my self will be, by Gods helpe, your leader, to breake the first lance.

When the Generall *Vaca de Castro* had made an ende of his breief Oration : Thei aunswered with one voice and greate courage, that thei were all readie to obaye his commaundement, and that by the helpe of God, thei would rather be cut in peeces, then to bee ouercome, because said thei, eche of vs dooe take this warre in hand, as proper to euery of vs. This doen the Captaines besought *Vaca de Castro*, not to enter into the Vantgard : for said thei, in no wise we will consent there to. But rather we beseche you to abide with the Reregard with thirtie horsemenne, for to succour where greatest neede shall require. And when he had heard their importunate sute, he graunted their request. And also consideryng that the daie was spent, and that onely one hower and a half remained of the daie, the night was so nigh at hande, he would gladly haue delaied the battaile till the next daie.

But Captaine *Alonso de Aluarado* saied vnto hym : sir, if this night battaile be not fought, we shall al perishe : and sith the hartes of your men are already determined, staie you not for an other consultation. *Vaca de Castro* liked well his counsaile, but yet he feared the want of the daie light, sayng : Oh would to God, that now I had the power of Iosue, to staie the sunne. In the meane

while, *Don Diego* began to shote his artillarie, because, for to ioyne battail, the contrary side could not come downe the hille, without great daunger of the men, euen as a plaine marke to be shot at.

But the cheef Seriant and *Alonso de Aluarado*, sought out on the left hande a sure entrie, which descended into a valley, where thei might at will sette vpon their enemies without perill of the Ordinaunce, whiche shott passed cleane ouer their heds, so that the Squadrons came downe in order, in this wise.

The right hande, had *Alonso de Aluarado*, who with his companie attended on the roiall standarde : of which, was *Alferez*, *Christoual de Barrientos* borne in the Citie, called CUIDAD RODRIGO, and now was a citezen of the Citie of TRUGILLIO : The left side was commended to these fower Captaines *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*, *Gomes de Aluarado*, *Garcilaso de la Vega*, *Pedro Ansuerez*, eche of them carryng in good order their standardes, and companies, and thei them selues went in the first rowes. And in the midst of the horsemen went the Captaines *Pedro de Vergara*, and *Iuan Velez de Gueuara*, with the Infanterie, and *Nunio de Castro* went the Hargabuziers, in the foremoste front to beginne with skirmish, and to retire to their Squadron, when tyme should require.

*Vaca de Castro* aboade in the reregarde with his thirtie horsemen, somewhat a farre of from the power of the battaile, so that alwaies he might succour where he should see greatest neede, as in effect he did.

¶ How the bartaile of Chupas was fought. Chap. 19.

WHilest the Armie of *Vaca de Castro* marched to warde the enemy, who ceased not in shootyng of his Ordinaunce: which shotte passed on high, cleane ouer the armie of *Vaca de Castro*. Whereupon *Don Diego* suspected, that *Candia* who was Maister Gunner, had been suborned, and that therefore willyngly, he discharged his ordinaunce in suche sorte: so that without any further hearyng of the matter, he slewe the Gonner with his owne handes, and when he had so doen, he hym self shotte of a peece of Ordinance which entred into one of the Squadrons, and slue many of them.

When Captaine *Carauajall* considered, that their Artillarie could not bee brought with suche speede, as tyme required: he determined with his companie to leaue it behinde them, and to enter the battaile without any longer delaye, or benefite of their Ordenaunce.

At this instant *Don Diego* and his Captaines *Iuan Balsa*, *Iuan Tellio*, *Diego Mendez*, *Diego de Hoces*, *Martyn de Bilbao*, *Iuan de Oлло*, and the residue: had placed their horsemen in twoo Squadrons, and betweene them the Squadron of the Infanterie, and their great Ordinaunce in front, towarde the place, where *Vaca de Castro* was thought to giue the onsette. And demyng it a cowardie, to staie any longer, the Squadrons marched on with the Artillerie, towarde the face of the force of *Vaca de Castro*, cleane against the will, and opinion of *Pedro Suarez* cheef Seriant of his Armie, who beeyng a manne experte in the warres, liked not their doynges: for as soone as he saw the setting forward of the Ordenaunce, he iudged

the feeld to be loste. Because in the place where before the Campe was pitched, there was space sufficient for the Artillarie, to offende at will, before the enemie might come nere, and with procedyng forward, thei of force loste their benefite of the Ordenaunce, and so came without discretion vpon the power of their aduersaries. When *Pedro Suarez* sawe that thei would not accepte and followe his counsell: he sette spurres to his horse, and fledde to the parte of *Vaca de Castro*.

In this meane while, *Paulo*, brother vnto *Lynga* encountered with *Vaca de Castro* on the left hande of his armie, with a great companie of Indian Souldiars, who shot with dartes and throwyng of stones with slynges and other engines. But the hargubuzers whiche were placed for tyme of nede, set vpon them and slewe many: whereupon thei began to flee, in whose place entered *Martin Cote*, Captaine of the hargubuzers of *Don Diego*, who began to skirmish with the companie of Captaine *Castro* and the Squadrons proceeded by the sounde of their drummes, till thei came to the place where thei abode, whilst the Ordnance was shot of: which was doen with such furie that thei could not breake so sone as thei would: and although thei were within shot, yet they receiued thereby no damage, sauyng the companie of footemen which were placed on high ground, so that the Ordnance made a greate spoyle among them, and forced the Squadrons to open: yet not withstandyng, the Captaines with great dilligence caused them to ioyn againe.

In this meane while, *Francisco Carauaiall* cheife Sariant, staid the Captaines of his side, vntill all the

Ordnaunce was discharged, and then the horsemen going vp a little plot of high grounde, met with the hargubuziers of *Don Diego*, who at this instant slue *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*, and *Gruiez de Tordoya* with two bullets, and wounded many others. When Captaine *Pedro de Vergara* felt him self hurte with the shot of a hargubuze, he began to crye vnto the Squadrons of horsmen to breake, for if (said he) ye delaie any longer all your footemen will be spoyed. Whereupon the Trumpets sounded to breake, and immediately the horsemen of *Vaca de Castro*, encountered with the horsemen of *Don Diego* with great courage, in suche wise that thei brake on both sides almoste all their launces and many were slaine and vnhorsed on each side: when their launces failed, thei ioyned with force of sworde and battaile axe, in such wise, that they fought with many a bloodie stroke, till thei were well nigh brethlesse, and thereupon forced to rest a while.

The Captaines of the footemen of *Vaca de Castro* his side, beganne also to encounter with those of *Don Diego*, hauing no feare or respecte of the Ordnaunce, by mean of Captaine *Carauaiall*, who valiantly encouraged them, saying, feare ye not the shot more then I doe for ye see (said he) I am a grose and a fat man, and a better marke to be shot at then ye are, and because ye shall not thinke that I trust in my armour, behold my doynge, and thereupon he put of a coate of maile which he had on hym, and also his hedpeece, remainyng in his dublet and hose, and in this sorte he led his companie on the face of the artillerie, who followed with such courage, that in shorte space their won it, and slewe many of those that had the



charge thereof, and then ioyned in battaile with the contrarie side so valiantly, that the victorie was onely attributed vnto hym.

At this instant the night approched and began to waxe darke, so that skarcely one knewe an other, but onely by their watche worde. The horsemen likewise began their fight a fresh, so that then the victorie began to appeare on the behalf of *Vaca de Castro* who with his thirtie horsemen gaue the onset on the left hande, where were twoo firme Ensignes of *Don Diego*, who cried victorie on their side: Notwithstanding, all the other Ensignes of *Don Diego* beganne to retire as ouercome, and *Vaca de Castro* breakyng in among them, there began a hot fight, in the which, some of those thirtie horsemen were wounded and vnhorsed. And also Captain *Ximenez*, *Nicholas Montaluo*, and other Gentlemen were slaine. But *Vaca de Castro* striuyng for victorie with so noble a courage, *Don Diego* and his men beganne to turne their backes and flee, and *Vaca de Castro* and his companie followed, among whom he made a greate slaughter and wounded many.

When Captaine Bilbao and *Cristoual de Sota*, who serued vnder *Don Diego*, sawe their side to flee, thei receiued so greate greefe, that like desperate men thei entered into the thronge of their enemies, sayng eche of them, I am he that slewe the Lord Marquesse, and in this order thei fought till thei were both cut in peeces.

Many of *Don Diego*, his side, escaped through the darkenesse of the night, and also with takyng from the dead their conisance, for *Vaca de Castro* gaue vnto his men red skarfes, and *Don Diego* gaue vnto his white

skarfes : in this sorte the victorie was manifestly knowne to be for *Vaca de Castro* : notwith standyng at the beginnyng of the battaile, *Vaca de Castro* lost many of his men, in so much that the victorie was then thought to be on *Don Diego* his side. But now in the flight of those which were ouercome, thei fled from one perill and fell into an other : whiche was, as thei escaped passing doune into a Valley, the Indian enemies slewe a great number of them, and like wise a hundred and fiftie horsemen which fled to the Towne of GUAMANGA which stood distant two leagues from the place where the battaile was fought. And there thei were vnarmed, and taken prisoner by those few Tounes men, which abode behinde to keepe the Towne.

*Don Diego*, and *Diego Mendez* fled to Cusco, where thei were apprehended by *Rodrigo Salazar*, who was his owne Lieutenant, and *Antonio Ruiz de Gueuara* Shrieve of the Citie.

In this sorte finished the auctoritie and gouernment of *Don Diego*, who in one daie sawe hymself Lorde and Prince ouer all Peru, and on an other daie (likewise) saw him self prisoner by his owne officers. This battaile was fought the sixtene daie of September. ANNO .1542.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro* gaue thankses vnto his souldiers for the victorie which God had giuen them. Chap. 20.

THE greatest parte of the night was spent in gathering the souldiers together, who had beene occupied in the spoyle of *Don Diego* his tentes, where thei founde a greate treasure of golde and siluer, and slewe some which thei found hidden, and wounded. When thei were all gathered together, thinking that *Don Diego* would renewe his armie, all the footemen attended in a readinesse, and likewise the horsemen.

*Vaca de Castro* spent the most part of the night in the commendation of his Souldiers, and generally (also) his whole armie, and gaue particular thankses to euery of them for their valiant seruice. In this battaile were many Captaines and souldiers, which singularly did shewe the vallour of their noble hartes : especially, *Don Diego* hoppyng to haue the victorie, and also iudgyng his casue to be iust, sithens his quarell was to reuenge his fathers death : yea, he tooke more paines then his age required : for at that instant he was but two and twenty yeares olde. There were also many of his armie that shewed them selues valiant warriors : Likewise many that were with *Vaca de Castro*, shewed in this exploite their noble mindes, and especially to reuenge the Lord Marques his death, who so entirely thei loued.

In this battaile were slaine on both sides to the number of three hundred men, among whom were many Captaines and men of estimation, especially *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*, and *Gomez de Tordoya*, who pretendyng to get honour, and to be singuler in this battaile, were appar-

relled in white veulet, besett with buttons of golde, which attire was worne vpon their armour, by meane wherof thei were knowne, and the soner slaine by the hargubuziers, as before hath been declared. Likewise *Alonso de Aluarado*, and Captaine *Carauajall* who feared not the greate Ordenaunce, nor any other daunger, where the bullets of the hargubuziers rained like haile : yea, it was thought a thyng impossible for them to escape, so that they dispising death, it semed that death fled from them, as often it doeth happen, in all perilles, and the fearfull to be soonest intrapped, as in this battaile did plainly appeare : and especially, there was a yong man who feared to enter into the battaile, hid himself behind a rock, where he though not onely to be sure, but also should not heare the noyse of Ordnaunce, and yet by chaunce there came a pellet from the great Ordnaunce, that brake the Rocke and slewe hym.

The principallest that shewed their hautie courage, on the behalf of his Maiestie, besides those which hath been reheased : were the Licenciats, *Benito de Carauajall*, *Iuan de Sayaneda*, *Lorenzo Daldana*, *Francisco Godoy*, *Diego de Aguilar*, *Bernaldino de Balderama*, *Nicolas de Ribera*, *Hieronimo de Aliaga*, *Iuan de Barbaran*, *Michell de la Serna*, *Lope de Mendosa*, *Diego Centeno*, *Melchior Verdugo*, *Francisco de Barrio Nuevo*, the Licenciats *de la Gama*, *Gomes de Aluarado*, *Gaspar Rojas*, *Don Gomez de Luna*, *Paula de Meneses*, *Iuan Alonso Palomino*, *Pedro Alonso Hinojosa*, *Don Pedro Puerto Carero*, Captaine *Caceres*, *Diego Ortiz de Guzman*, *Francisco de Ampuero*, and many others which were in the first rowes of the Squadrons.

¶ Of the iustice which was executed vpon those of the  
 parcialtie of *Don Diego*. Chap. 21.

THE night of the victorie, happened an exceedyng greate Froste, by reason where of many of the wounded men, died with cold, especially such as could not come to the Campe, the Indians stripped them, and left them naked without respecte either to their freendes, or enemies. And this was the principallest seruice that the Indians vsed in those battailes, for thei did not onely robb and spoile the weake and wounded persones, but also mauled them with their Clubbes. And through the darknesse of the Night, the wounded creatures could not bee holpen by their freendes, sauynge *Gomes de Tordoya*, whiche was not throughly dedde, and *Pedro Ansuerex* obtained a Tent: and because the carriage was not then come, the moste of the souldiars laye in the feeld without Tententes or succour all that night.

It was a sorrowfull sight to heare and see, the dolefull cries and piteous mone, which the wounded menne did make, with the bitter paines of their woundes. There were aboue fower hundred persones wounded, who the next daie followyng *Vaca de Castro*, caused to bee cured, as well as he might, and the principallest among the dedde were carried to bee buried in the Towne of *GUA-MANGA*. But cheefly he caused the bodies of *Pedro Aluares* and *Gomes de Tordoya* to be buried with greate pompe and solempnitie.

The same mornynge followyng, *Vaca de Castro* commaunded certaine of the prisoners to bee behedded, whiche had been accesaries to the Lorde Marques death:

and the next daie when he came to GUAMANGA, he founde that Captaine *Diego de Rojas*, had behedded *Iuan de Tellio*, and other Captaines of *Don Diego*. *Vaca de Castro* committed the execution of Iustice to the Lieutenant *de la Gama*, who hanged and behedded fourtie persones of the cheefest offenders: others he banished, a residue he pardoned, and also that the number of those which were executed amounted to three score persones. This doen, he graunted licence to all the Citezens to goe to their houses: and *Vaca de Castro* went to the Citie of Cusco, where he made new processe against *Don Diego*, and after certaine daies commaunded hym to be behedded. He like wise released out of prison *Diego Mendez*, with other twoo prisoners, whiche had serued against hym, who as soone as thei were at libertie, went vnto *Inga* into the Mountaines called ANDEZ, whiche through the asperous entrie, are inexpugnable.

*Inga* receiued them very ioyfully, and shewed greate sorrowe for the death of his frende *Don Diego*, whom he loued excedingly, as appeared: for when he passed that waie, he gaue vnto hym many shirtes of Maile and Corselettes, and other sortes of armor which he had taken from the Christians, which he had ouercome and slaine, when thei went to aide *Gonsalo Pizarro* and *Iuan Pizarro* in Cusco, sent by the Lorde Marques as heretofore hath been declared. He had also Indians disguised at the battaile, to bryng hym newes of the successe thereof.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro*, sent to discouer the Countrey, by diuerse wayes. Chap. 22.

THE battaile agaynst *Don Diego* beeing woonne, and the countrey pacified, *Vaca de Castro* deuised to deuide his men of Warre: and not hauing wherewith to gratifie them all, except hee should send them to conquer abroad in the countrey: wherupon hee commaunded Captayne *Vergara*, that with the company which he had brought to serue his Maiestie, hee should return to his conquest, of the BRACAMOROS: hee sente also Captayne *Diego de Rojas*, and *Phillip Gutierrez* with 300. men, Eastward, to discouer that countrey, which afterward they did inhabite, which countrey ioyneth with the Riuer of Plate:

With Captayne *Monroy*, hee sent succour to the Prouince of CHILI, to Captaine *Pedro de Valdiuia*, hee sente also Captaine *Iuan Perez de Gueuarra*, to conquer the Lande of MULLOBAMBA which hee to fore had discovered, and is a countrey more hilly then playne: out of the side of which hilles, springeth two greate riuers, which falleth into the Northen Sea: The one is called MARANION, of the which heretofore wee haue spoken: and the other is called the riuer of Plate: the naturall people, of that countrey, are CARIUES, which eateth mens flesh. The countrey is so hoat, that the piople goe naked, sauinge light Mantels, which they wrap about their bodies.

In this countrey, *Iuan Perez* had vnderstandinge of another great Lande, which standeth beyond those Hilles, toward the North, where are ritch Mynes of

Gold, and there bredeth Cammels, and sundry sortes of Powltery, like vnto those of the new Spayne, and also sheepe, some what lesser then the Sheepe of PERU, and all their corne ground is watered with slewces, because there it seldome rayneth: yet there is a maruailous great Lake, from the which issueth many riuers, on the borders wherof are many villages, replenished with people. In all those Riuers, are certaine fishes like vnto great Mastiffes, which often times doo bite the Indians, which enter into those Riuers, or passe alonge the riuier sides, for they vse to come many times out of the Riuers.

This country hath the Riuier of MARANION, on the North side, and the country of BRASILL on the East part, which the Portingals now possesse: and the riuier of Plate lyeth from thence Southward. The report was, that the Wemen, called *Amazons* dwel in that country.

Now *Vaca de Castro*, hauing dispatched his Captaynes and Souldiers, on these discoueries, he abode in Cusco one yere and a halfe, making reperticion of the Indians, which were vacant, and putting things in order, in the country: Hee likewise made statutes, to the great vtillitie of the common Weale, and conseruacion of the Indians: In this season was discouered in the Comarkes, or borders of Cusco, the richest mynes of Golde, that vnto this day, the like at any time had not been seene: especially, in a riuier, called CARABAYA, in which Mynes, one Indian hath gathered 50. poyzes in one daye: and al the country was thoroughly quieted, and the Indian people cherished and defended, from the greate wronges which in former time they receiued.



At this time, came *Gonsalo Pizarro* to Cusco : for till now, hee could not obtayne lycence so to doo. And after that hee had abode there certaine dayes, he went to CHARCAS to deale in matters of his profite, and there remayned, till the Viceroy *Blanco Nunez Vela*, came into the countrey.

The discouery of the ritcher Mynes of  
*Potosi*, and how Captaine CARAUAJALL  
toke it into his power.

Fortune hauing shewed her selfe so amiable to Captaine *Carauaiall*, it appeareth that now shee hath brought him to the top of the Hill of Prosperitie. It happened that after certaine dayes, that the Indians and *Anacondas* of *Iuan de Villa Roell*, Cittizen of the Towne of PLATA, went trauieling in the countrey about 18. leagues distant from the sayde Towne, they chaunced to come to a highe Hill, scituated in a Playne, in the which, they found manifest tokens of siluer, whereupon they began to melte out of a vayne which seemed riche.

The riches was so great which heere they founde, that almost in euery vayne where they made their ensay, they found the greatest part of Ewre to be fine siluer, and the basest Mines were by valuacion .480. buckets, in euery hundred weight of Ewre, which is the greatest riches, that euer hath ben seen or written of. When the Iustice of the towne of Plate, had vnderstandynge of this fortunate successe, the Ruler of the sayd Towne came

and deuided the said Mynes amonge the townes men, and eche of them made his choyse according to his lot.

The *Indians* and *Anacondas*, which came thither to worke were many in number, in sutch sort that in short time they built at the foote of the saide hill, a Towne to dwell in, which multiplied in suche wise, that there inhabited of Indian workmen aboue. 7000. persons, which did so well vnderstand that business, that they came to agreement with their maisters, to allow vnto them a weekly pention : but their gayne was twise so muche as they payde vnto their maysters.

The vaines of these Mines is of sutch qualitie, that the Ewre wil not melt with the winde of Bellowes, as in other Mines are accustomed : but their melting is in certain litle furnaces, called GUAYRAS, wherein they vse to melt with coles and sheepes dung, with the only force of the ayre, with out any other instrument. These Mines are called POROSI, by reason that al the borders there about are so called.

These Indian workmen are riche, for he that hath but foure or fve thousand poyzes is counted but poore : notwithstanding the great pension or tribute which they pay vnto their maisters, and all such workemen, which come thither to worke, will not willingly depart from thence, by reason that their paines and peril is not comparable to other Mines, by blowynge of the bellowes, with the greate smoke of the coles : and likewise the Sulfer of the vaynes of Ewre.

When the reperticion of these Mines were made, they began to prouide all sortes of necessary victualles for the woorkemen which was a thing very diffcil to doo, con-

sideringe the greate number of Indians which daily came to serue in those workes, wherby victualles grew to such a dearth, that a bushell of Maiz, came to be worth twentie castlins of Gold, and a bushell of Wheate as much : and a Sacke of the earbes, called *Coca* was worth. 30. poyzes, yea, and after ward it came to bee derer : Yet through the great treasure which there was founde, all the other Mines were left vnhabited, and especially the Mines of Porco where *Hernando Pizarro* had a great porcion of ground, out of the whiche hee gathered great riches.

The Mines also which gathered gold in CAMBAYA, and other riuers, left their workes and came to POTOSI, because they found there greater profit without comparison. They which vnderstand in these workes, holde opinion that by manifest tokens these Mines are of perpetuities.

With this good successe, Captayne *Carauajal* began to gather great summes of treasure, in such sorte, that he tooke possession of al the Indians and ANACONAS, of such Spaniards as were slayne or fled, or had been agaynst him in his former warre : so that in short time he obtained into his power, the sum of seuen hundred thousand poyzes, and would not therof ayde his soldiours with any thing, who had folowed him in al his warres : whereupon they began to murmur among them selues, and were minded to kill him.

The Chief of this mutiny, were *Luis Pardomo Alonso de Camargo*, *Diego de Balmazada*, and *Diego de Luxan* : there were nere 30. persons, which determined to execute the sayd pretence within one month after *Carauajal* was come to the town of PLATA : But through

## 222 The Discouery and Couquest of *Peru*.

a mischance which hapned, they deferred the matter til another day. This practice was not so secretly wrought, but that *Carauajal* came to the knowledge therof, wherupon he commanded *Luis Pardomo*, *Camargo*, *Orbanaja*, *Balmaseda*, 10. or 12. persons of the principallest to be quartered, and others banished : so that with the execution of sutch cruell Iustices, in causes of Mutynies, the people were so feared, that they neuer durst at any time after to deale in the like practises.

FINIS













W  
M 033